Sally Lockhart
Ayr 1st Jany 1783.

THE INCAS:

OR,

THE DESTRUCTION

OF THE

EMPIRE OF PERU.

VOL. II.

1608 | 4654

THE INCAS:

OR,

THE DESTRUCTION

OF THE

EMPIRE OF PERU.

By M. MARMONTEL.

VOL II.

" Tolerate all Sects, not as regarding them all with an Eye
" of equal Indifference, but as ſuffering that which it has pleaſed God to ſuffer, until they can be brought into the Path of
" Truth by the Power of Perſuaſion."

FENELON's *Directions for the Conſcience of a King.*

LONDON:

Printed for J. NOURSE, P. ELMSLY, and E. LYDE, in the Strand; and G. KEARSLY, in Fleet-Street.

MDCCLXXVII.

BRITISH MUSEUM
30 NOV 71

TABLE of CONTENTS

TO THE

SECOND VOLUME.

CHAP. XXVI. *A civil war threatens to break out in the kingdom of the Incas. Ataliba, with the hopes of prevailing on his brother to let him remain at peace, solicits the mediation of Alonzo de Molina; and with this view recounts to him in what manner the kingdom was founded, its increase and the division made between the two Incas by the King their father* — — — Page 1

CHAP. XXVII. *At a sacrifice offered to the Sun, for the success of the ambassy, Alonzo sees Cora, one of the sacred virgins; loves her and is beloved by her* 12

CHAP. XXVIII. *Eruption of the volcano at Quito. Alonzo bears off Cora from the asylum of the virgins; seduces her, and conducts her back* 19

CHAP. XXIX. *Ambassy of Alonzo de Molina at the court of Cusco* — — 32

CHAP. XXX. *Continuation of his journey. Description of Cusco; its riches. The festival of marriage, celebrated at Cusco on the day of the winter solstice* 41

CHAP. XXXI. *Description of the precincts of Cusco. Conversation of Alonzo with the Priest of the Sun, whom he finds cultivating the earth* 51

CHAP. XXXII. *The hopes of peace are at once dissipated. War declared between the two Incas* 59

CHAP. XXXIII. *Ataliba, King of Quito, assembles his army. Marches out of his own territories, se-*

cures the fort of Cannara, and advances to meet the enemy —— —— —— 66

CHAP. XXXIV. *Huaſcar, King of Cuſco, marches at the head of his people. The battle of Tumibamba. The army of Quito conquered; Ataliba is made priſoner. He eſcapes from his priſon* 76

CHAP. XXXV. *The Cannarians, riſing in favour of the King of Cuſco, beſiege in their fortreſs the troops of the King of Quito. Eclipſe of the Sun. Defeat of the Cannarians. Battle of Saſcahuna. The King of Cuſco conquered. Taken. The eldeſt ſon of the King of Quito is killed in this battle* 87

CHAP. XXXVI. *The body of the young Prince brought to the King his father. Interview between Ataliba and Huaſcar his priſoner* —— 99

CHAP. XXXVII. *Return of Ataliba to Quito, with the body of the young Prince* —— 109

CHAP. XXXVIII. *Feſtival of paternity obſerved at the vernal equinox. Funeral of the young Inca* 114

CHAP. XXXIX. *Cora is diſcovered to have violated her vows. Her father goes to Alonzo, acquaints him with his daughter's misfortune, and adviſes him to withdraw himſelf from the puniſhment that awaits him* — — — 123

CHAP. XL. *Cora appears before her judge. Alonzo accuſes himſelf, defends her, and procures her acquittal* — — — 129

CHAP. XLI. *Voyage of Pizarro to Spain. His arrival at Seville. Is preſent at an* auto-de-fé 141

CHAP. XLII. *Gonzalo, the brother of Pizarro, viſits him at Seville. A converſation between them. Pizarro is preſented to the Emperor: obtains the government of the country he is going to conquer. He returns to America* —— —— 154

CHAP. XLIII.

BRITISH MUSEUM 30 71 NOV

CHAP. XLIII. *On his arrival at St Domingo, Pizarro there finds Las-Casas, ill of a distemper supposed to be mortal. A new proof of the affection of the Indians for Las-Casas. Pizarro is a witness of it* 167

CHAP. XLIV. *Pizarro sets out from St Domingo, goes to Panama, embarks on the South Sea, lands at the port of Coaca, and proceeds by land to Tumbès. The state of things in Peru when Pizarro arrived. Battle on the Abancaï, where the King of Cusco's party is almost entirely destroyed* —— 178

CHAP. XLV. *A fort which Alonzo de Molina causes to be erected at Tumbès, is attacked by the Spaniards, and defended by the Mexicans* —— 185

CHAP. XLVI. *Having been repulsed in attempting to storm the fort, a siege is opened. Amazilli, the sister of Orozimbo, is taken by the Spaniards. Her generous resolution and death. The southern people join the Spaniards. Pizarro reimbarks, and, from Tumbès, proceeds to the port of Rimac* — 201

CHAP. XLVII. *Ataliba encamps with his army on the banks of the river Zamora. The festival of death solemnized, at the summer solstice* — 216

CHAP. XLVIII. *Alonzo, in the Indian camp, receives letters from Pizarro and Las-Casas. On the faith of both, he proposes to the Inca to enter into a treaty of peace. He goes to meet Pizarro, confers with him, they agree, he returns to the camp of Ataliba, and in opposition to the advice and example of the Mexicans, persuades the Inca to grant to Pizarro the interview he desires, and receive him in his camp* — — — 221

CHAP. XLIX. *Interview between Pizarro and Ataliba. Massacre of the Indians caused by the fanatic Valverde. The Mexican troop destroyed. Alonzo is wounded.*

wounded. Gonzalva Davila is killed by Capana. Ataliba is impriſoned in the palace of Caſſamalca 231

CHAP. L. *Pizarro viſits Ataliba in his confinement. Death of Alonzo de Molina. Valverde ſtirs up the Caſtilians againſt Pizarro. Pizarro appeaſes them, baniſhes Valverde, and ſends him to Rimac to be carried from thence to a deſart iſland. Ataliba propoſes a ranſom, and his offer is accepted* 245

CHAP. LI. *Almagro arrives from Panama. Meets with Valverde. Their converſation. The death of Huaſcar in his priſon. Ataliba is accuſed of the murder. Pizarro, perſuaded of his innocence, is anxious to ſave him. Divides the treaſures which Ataliba had collected for his ranſom. Ferdinand Pizarro is ſent to Spain — — —* 258

CHAP. LII. *Ferdinand, arriving at the port of Rimac, ſuffers himſelf to be wrought upon by the pretended repentance of Valverde, and grants him permiſſion to live amongſt the ſavages. Reſolution taken in the council to try Ataliba. His family is brought to the ſame priſon with himſelf. The death of Cora on the tomb of Alonzo. The firmneſs of Ataliba forſakes him when he ſees his family around him* 271

CHAP. LIII. *The trial of Ataliba. The uſe Valverde makes of his liberty. Ataliba is ſtrangled in his priſon. Pizarro retires to Lima. Peru becomes a prey to the ravages of the Spaniards. They deſtroy one another. Pizarro is aſſaſſinated* 278

END of the TABLE of CONTENTS.

THE INCAS.

CHAP. XXVI.

THE confidence of Ataliba authorized Alonzo to explore in his boſom the hidden cauſe of this melancholy, with which he ſaw him conſumed. "Inca," ſays he, "I fear the impending danger, of which I was "anxious to forewarn you, hath too deeply af-"fected your mind."

"In ſeeking the ground of my anxiety," replied the Inca, "you afford me conſolation. I "was afraid to diſtreſs you, tho' I wanted a "friend to partake my concern. It reſpects my "right to the throne I poſſeſs, and from

"which the king of Cuſco is determined to "drive me. I want with him, a wiſe mini-"ſter and a faithful mediator, and have fixed my "eyes upon you. Will you undertake the office?" —"Yes," anſwered Alonzo, "if your cauſe "be juſt."—"It is juſt; and you yourſelf will "judge it to be ſo. Underſtand then the na-"ture of this empire from its origin; with "what view it was founded, and, as it hath "been continually expanding, the reaſons why "it muſt have declined, if it had not been di-"vided.

"In early times this immenſe country was "inhabited by various nations, who were "without laws, unuſed to diſcipline, and de-"ſtitute of morals. Wandering thro' foreſts, "their prey, and ſuch fruits as an uncultivated "ſoil threw forth, as it were, in pity to their "wants, afforded them a caſual ſubſiſtence. "Their hunting conſiſted of war on each other, "and the conquerors fed on the bodies of the "vanquiſhed. They waited not for the laſt ſigh "of the wounded to drink his blood, but tore "him aſunder alive *. Their captives they "fatted for their deteſtable feaſts. Of theſe, "if any were females, they ſuffered their com-

* See Garcil. book 1. chap. 12.

"panions

BRITISH MUSEUM 30 71 NOV

" panions to cohabit with them, or elſe rendered
" them pregnant themſelves, for the purpoſe of
" devouring their offspring.

" Some of them, grateful by inſtinct, wor-
" ſhipped every object in nature from which
" they derived any advantage; mountains, the
" ſources of rivers; rivers themſelves, and the
" fountains which watered and fertilized the
" earth; the trees which afforded them fuel;
" thoſe animals of a gentle and timid nature upon
" which they fed; the ſea abounding with fiſh,
" and which they denominated their Nurſe *.
" But objects of terror had the moſt numerous vo-
" taries.

" Whatever was hideous, or horrible, they
" converted to a god, as if man was delighted to
" terrify himſelf. They worſhipped the tyger,
" the lion, the vulture, and large ſnakes: they a-
" dored the elements, tempeſts, the winds, thun-
" der; caverns and precipices: they proſtrated
" themſelves before torrents, the noiſe of which
" depreſſed them with fear; before gloomy fo-
" reſts, and at the foot of thoſe dreadful volcanos,
" which caſt forth upon them torrents of flame
" and rocks of fire.

* See Garcil. book 1. chap. 2.

"Having formed to themſelves Deities cruel "and ſanguinary, their worſhip muſt correſpond "to the nature of their Gods. One man thought "to pleaſe the object of his devotion, by piercing "his boſom, or mangling his entrails; another, "ſtill more furious, would ſnatch the ſuckling "from the breaſt of its mother, and ſlaughter it "on the altar of his blood-thirſty Gods. In pro-"portion as their ſufferings were rendered more "exquiſite, the enjoyment of their Divinity was "ſuppoſed to be augmented. From the Gods to "whom they ſacrificed what was moſt dear to "themſelves, they expected the gratification of e-"very deſire *.

"He, whoſe rays diffuſe life throughout na-"ture, beheld, and pitied their error. "It is not," ſaid he, "ſtrange that thoſe ſhould be wicked, "whoſe hearts have no underſtanding. Inſtead "of puniſhing them for walking in darkneſs, let "us ſend them the truth; they will walk in its "light. It is not leſs eaſy to illuminate their "minds than their eyes."

"He ſpoke; and ſent into theſe inhoſpitable "climates, two of his well-beloved children,

* *Mamma Cocha*, mother ſea.

"the

" the wife and virtuous Manco, and the beau-
" tiful Oello, his ſiſter and wife *.

" My dear Alonzo, you will ſee the celebrated
" and ſacred place where theſe children of the
" Sun deſcended †. The ſavages ſcattered in
" the ſurrounding foreſts aſſembled at their call.
" Manco inſtructed the men to cultivate the
" earth; to ſow it, and direct the currents of
" water for its refreſhment: Oello taught the
" women to ſpin, and to weave, and inveſt them-
" ſelves in the clothes they had woven; to de-
" vote their attention to domeſtic cares, to
" ſerve their huſbands with tender aſſiduity, and
" to educate their children. They added to the
" gift of the arts the bleſſing of laws. The wor-
" ſhip of the Sun their father, an inſtitution
" inſpired by love and founded on gratitude,
" which never coſt nature a ſigh, nor reaſon a
" murmur, was the firſt of theſe, and the ſoul of
" the reſt.

" Aſtoniſhed to behold themſelves ſurround-
" ed by plenty, ſecurity and peace, bleſſings
" which before were entirely unknown, they
" ſeemed to be tranſlated into a new ſtate of be-
" ing. Their wants being ſatisfied, their terrors

* Garcil. book 1. chap. 15.

† *Where theſe children of the Sun deſcended.*] On the borders of a lake about a league diſtant from Cuſco. The Incas had there built a magnificent temple to the Sun.

" vaniſhed. The pleaſure of worſhipping a pro-
" pitious and beneficent God, and of being juſt
" and good in imitation of him; the facility of
" being happy, mutual benevolence; in a word,
" the charms of an innocent and peaceable ſocie-
" ty captivated every heart. Aſhamed of having
" been blind and barbarous, they readily yielded
" to civilization, and ſubmitted to the mild re-
" ſtraints of law. Cuſco was founded by their
" hands, and encompaſſed by a hundred vil-
" lages *. The venerable Manco, before he re-
" turned to repoſe himſelf with the Sun, his fa-
" ther, beheld uninterrupted proſperity in the em-
" pire he had founded.

" His eldeſt ſon ſucceeded him †; and, like
" himſelf, by gentleneſs, perſuaſion, and benefits,
" enlarged the limits of this happy empire.

" The heir of this Prince ‡ rendered his arms
" reſpectable; but employed them only againſt
" the ferocity of his neighbours, without imbru-
" ing his hands in their blood.

* *Encompaſſed by a hundred villages.*] Thirteen on the Eaſt, thirty on the Weſt, twenty on the North, and forty on the South.

† *His eldeſt ſon ſucceeded him.*] SINCHI ROCHA, the ſecond King. His conqueſt extended twenty leagues to the South.

‡ *The heir of this Prince.*] LOQUE YUPANQUE, the third King conquered forty leagues of country from North to South, and twenty from Weſt to Eaſt.

" His

"His ſucceſſor was leſs happy. The peo-
"ple whom he attempted to bring over com-
"pelled him to fight *. The firſt action was
"bloody; but the virtues of the conqueror a-
"toned for his conqueſt. His valour inſpired
"fear, and his clemency love.

"The eldeſt ſon of this hero † greatly en-
"larged his dominions, but without expending
"either the blood or the tears of thoſe whom he
"vanquiſhed. His return to Cuſco was glori-
"ous; he was borne in triumph by Kings.

"The ſucceeding ‡ Incas, to ſubdue the feroci-
"ous people with whom they contended,

* *Compelled him to fight.*] Theſe were the *Cayaviri*, a ſouthern people, whom he beſieged on their mountain. He fought alſo the *Collas* at the ford of a river, the mountaineers of *Atom-Puna*, and thoſe of *Villili* and *Dallia* on the Weſt.

† *The eldeſt ſon of this hero.*] CAPAC YUPANGUE, the fifth King. His conqueſt extended on the Weſt, as far as the ſea; on the South, from *Tatira* to the country of the *Charcas*; on the Eaſt, to the foot of mount *Antis*; on the North, to *Racuna*, in the province of *Chinca*.

‡ *The ſucceeding Incas.*] ROCA, the ſixth King;
The ſeventh, VIRACOCHA.
The eighth, PACHACUTEC.
The ninth, YUPANGUE.
The tenth, TUPAC YUPANGUE.
The eleventh, HUAINA CAPAC, father of the two reigning Incas.

"were

" were ſometimes obliged to beſet their retreat,
" to repel their efforts to eſcape from it, and
" there allow them to reſolve on ſuch meaſures
" as neceſſity might dictate. But our arms
" awaited the reſult of their determination,
" without ever aſſaulting them. If they reſol-
" ved to live independent and unhappy, it was a
" maxim to give them up, rather than deſtroy
" them. Ever indulgent and condeſcending,
" Peace went forth to meet them; and her
" only requiſition for the bleſſings ſhe offered *
" was a diſpoſition to enjoy them. It was the
" great deſign of the Incas to engage the world
" to be happy. A pure inſtitution of religion,
" wiſe laws, extenſive knowledge, uſeful arts,
" were the fruits of conqueſt; and theſe the
" conquered were allowed to gather. Such for
" eleven reigns was their ambition and their
" glory, and ſuch was the reward of their la-
" bours.

" The difficulty, however, of protecting this
" empire, encreaſed with its extent. During

* *The bleſſings ſhe offered.*] When beſieged on the mountains they wanted proviſions, and their children and wives had no other ſubſiſtence than the plants of the vallies, not only were they fed, but loaded back with ſupplies for their fathers and huſbands, and charged with the offer of friendſhip and peace.

" the

" the long ſpace of ten reigns it had experienced " but a ſingle revolt. My father, who was the " moſt gentle and juſt of Kings, ſaw three; one " towards the North, and two to the South of " theſe mountains. The extremities were no " longer under the eye of one monarch. To- " wards the Eaſt they had ſurmounted the lofty " Andes *; on the Weſt they ran out into the " ſea; to the North and the South immenſe de- " ſarts lie open before us; in ſhort, the whole " continent was included in the plan of our con- " queſts. A partition was therefore neceſſary a- " mong the children of the Sun.

" My father having ſubdued this fertile and " extenſive province, thought the time was now " come for making a diviſion. He had mar- " ried two wives; the one was Ocello, his ſiſter; " the other, Zulma, a deſcendant from the royal " line †. Huaſcar is the eldeſt of the children " of Ocello; he poſſeſſes Cuſco, the city of the " Sun, and the empire of our anceſtors. I am " the eldeſt of the children of Zulma; and the " province of Quito, an acquiſition made by my " father, was the inheritance which he, liberally

* Mountains ſince called the Cordelieres.

† *A deſcendant from the royal line*] Of the Caciques, who before the conqueſt of this province had been Kings of *Quito*.

" and

" and unſolicited, bequeathed to me, with his " expiring breath.

" The doubt is, whether he might thus diſpoſe " of a poſſeſſion which he held by his own right, " and owed only to his own valour? This is the " origin of a diſpute between my brother and my- " ſelf, which, if he compel me to take up arms, " muſt terminate in blood.

" My brother is haughty and indignant. His " cold pride knows not how to bend. To his " contempt for the will and memory of a father, " he joins the requiſition to myſelf, that I ſhall " deſcend from my throne and become ſubmiſ- " ſive to the law of his will. Feel you, if I " can comply. I love my brother; it is dread- " ful to ſee his hatred purſue me; it is terrible " to reflect that his people and mine muſt be- " come foes to each other, and that a domeſtic " war, kindled between the Incas, will ren- " der both an eaſy prey to a foreign oppreſſor. " But this ſcepter, this diadem,——from my " father I received them; and ſhall I ſuffer " my father to be inſulted? There is nothing " as an equal, an ally, a brother, and a friend, " that I would not yield to Huaſcar. Does he " wiſh to extend his conqueſts beyond the " banks of Mauli *, or the current of Ama-

* A river of Chili.

" rumayu?

" rumayu *? I will join in the enterprize. Do
" there remain in the vales of Naſca, or of Piſco,
" any rebels to be reduced? I will aſſiſt to ſub-
" ject them. His enemies ſhall be mine. But
" why will he perſiſt to diſgrace me? Why, to
" diſhonour and debaſe his own blood? Theſe
" tears are witneſſes to you of my ſincerity.
" Moſt earneſtly do I wiſh for peace. I have
" ſenſibility, but am violent; and greatly fear
" myſelf. It is for thee, my dear Alonzo, to
" prevent the evils of impending diſcord. Re-
" pair to Cuſco. Humanity dwells in thy heart,
" and truth on thy lips: thy candour, thy in-
" tegrity, the natural ſuperiority of thy reaſon to
" ours, that perſuaſive charm which accompanies
" thy words, may, perhaps, prevail upon him,
" and ſpare us both the moſt diſtreſſing evils.
" Shun not to expreſs, in the ſtrongeſt manner,
" the horror which a civil war excites in my
" heart; nor fear repeatedly to aſſure him that
" I will never relinquiſh my rights. My dying
" father placed me upon the throne which he
" himſelf had raiſed and confirmed; and I, to the
" laſt gaſp of life, will maintain it."

* The river of Snakes, now the river de la Plata.

Alonzo

Alonzo felt the importance and difficulty of ſuch a commiſſion; but was not diſpoſed to decline it; and every thing was ſoon prepared that could confer a ſplendor on his embaſſy, becoming the majeſty of both Kings.

CHAP. XXVII.

PREVIOUS to Alonzo's departure, the Inca, to commence this pacific enterprize under favourable auſpices, offered a ſacrifice to the Sun. The Mexicans attended; and Alonzo himſelf, as he partook not in the rites, thought it no crime to be preſent.

The Virgins of the Sun, who were admitted into the temple, miniſtered to the Pontiff at the altar. It was their duty to diſtribute the ſacrificial bread *, which one of them, after the offering, preſented to the Incas.

The unhappy deſtiny of Cora ordained that ſhe ſhould officiate on this ſolemn day.

Alonzo, by the diſtinguiſhed favour of the Monarch, was placed near him. The Prieſteſs

* *The ſacrificial bread.*] This bread was compoſed of the fineſt maize, and was called *Cancu*.

approached

approached with a veil on her head, and her brow crowned with flowers. Her eyes were caſt down; but her long eye-laſhes permitted a ſparkling radiance to eſcape them. Her lovely hands trembled, her lips were agitated, her boſom panted, and every circumſtance expreſſed the ſenſibility of her heart. Happy would ſhe have been had her timid eyes been never raiſed on Alonzo! One glance deſtroyed her; this imprudent glance preſented to her view the moſt formidable enemy to her repoſe and her innocence. If he, by his grace and beauty had melted the hearts even of cannibals when thirſting for his blood, what muſt have been their influence on the breaſt of a virgin, ſimple, tender, ingenuous, and made for love! This ſentiment, the germ of which nature had planted in her boſom, diſcloſed itſelf all at once.

In her agitation, occaſioned by the ſight of the Spaniard, whoſe beauty was ſtill improved by his dreſs, ſhe ſcarcely could prevent the golden baſket that contained the offering, from falling out of her hands. Her cheek loſt its colour, and her heart alternately ſuſpended and redoubled its palpitation. A ſudden chillneſs ſucceeded to the fever that throbbed within her veins, and her trembling knees almoſt failed to ſupport her.

Having finiſhed her miniſtry, ſhe returned towards the altar: but Alonzo, who was preſent to her imagination, ſtill ſeemed before her eyes. Interrupted and confuſed, in the performance of her duty, ſhe directed a ſuppliant look towards the image of the Sun, and it appeared to reflect upon her the features of Alonzo. "O God!" ſaid ſhe, "O God! what can this delirium "mean? How hath this young ſtranger bewilder-"ed my ſenſes! I am no more myſelf."

The ſacrifice being offered, and their devotions concluded, the Inca, attended by his Court, retired; the Prieſteſſes left the temple, and returned to that inviolable and ſacred aſylum where they were concealed from mortal view.

This retreat, in which Cora had found her days to flow on in a peaceful languor, became from that moment a gloomy and dreadful priſon. She felt the full weight of her chains, and her heart ſighed for freedom, tho' it were but in a deſart and with Alonzo: for ſhe continued to ſee and hear him, to ſpeak and complain to him, as if he had been actually preſent. "What! "never, never," ſays ſhe, "ſhall the illuſion, "which occupies my fancy, become a reality? "Ah! why did I ever ſee thee, thou dear ob-"ject of my thoughts, if I am condemned to "ſee thee no more? Ah! come, at leaſt before I die,

" die, come, thou adorable man, and view
" what ravage the ſight of thee alone hath made
" in a weak heart; come, behold, and pity thy
" victim! Where art thou? Wilt thou deign
" to think on me; on me, who burn, who die,
" with the hopeleſs deſire of ſeeing thee once
" more? Alas! what a miſerable ſituation is
" mine! I feel myſelf drawn towards him by
" an invincible attraction: my ſoul inceſſantly
" breaks thro' the walls of my confinement
" to ſeek him: awake, aſleep, he alone poſ-
" ſeſſes my thoughts; I would give my life to
" realize one of my dreams, and that but for a
" moment, even if the next I ſhould ceaſe to
" exiſt! Gracious God! doſt thou delight in
" tyranny, and does it yield thee pleaſure to
" rend a feeling heart? Thou knoweſt if mine
" conſented to the oath which my lips uttered.
" A power I could not oppoſe compelled me to
" ſpeak; but nature, in a voice that reached to
" thee at the inſtant, reclaimed againſt the un-
" juſt compulſion. My heart is not perjured;
" it promiſed thee nothing. Give me back,
" then, to myſelf. Alas! am I worthy of thee?
" Too weak, too frail, one moment, as thou haſt
" ſeen, one glance hath diſturbed my ſoul: wild,
" diſtracted, I no longer can command either my
" ſenſes or my reaſon."

At theſe words ſhe proſtrated herſelf, and not daring to behold the light of the God ſhe had betrayed, hid her face in her veil, which was wetted with tears. But ſoon the image of Alonzo, and that dreadful idea, *I ſhall ſee him no more*, obtruded themſelves, and cauſed her grief to burſt forth afreſh. "O my father! what have you done? "And what have I myſelf done? Why did I go "from you? Why bury myſelf alive? Alas? "my veneration for you was ſo full of affec- "tion! I would have ſerved you with ſo much "attention and love! O my father! my father! "you would have ſeen me near you, the gentle "conſolation of your peaceful old age, partaking "with my huſband the duty of rendering you "happy, and under your eyes bringing up my "children .... My children! Ah! never ſhall "I be a mother; never, at that dear and holy "name, ſhall my heart beat with joy. "This heart, dead to the tendereſt feelings of "nature and its ſofteſt attachments, is diſſevered "from the pureſt of pleaſures for ever."

That rapid and terrible lightning, which kindles at once two hearts made for each other, had ſtricken at the ſame inſtant both the young Indian and Alonzo. Surprized to ſee ſuch a combination of charms, agitated and enraptured with the ſingle look ſhe caſt upon him, he followed

lowed her with his eyes to the extremity of the temple, and became jealous even of the God whom he ſaw her adore.

Gloomy, reſtleſs, and impatient, he returned to the palace. Every thing diſtreſſed and conſtrained him. He endeavoured to recal his reaſon; he reproached himſelf for entertaining ſo fooliſh a paſſion, condemned himſelf, and bluſhed at it; he tried to extrude it from his boſom: but vain were his reproaches and ineffectual his efforts! Reflexion, in attempting to draw out the arrow, did but deepen the wound. One look of the Prieſteſs had transfuſed into his heart the delightful poiſon of hope. Indiſſoluble vows, a ſevere ſlavery, an incorruptible and vigilant guard, and an inacceſſible priſon, by turns preſented themſelves to his thoughts, and though he ſaw the difficulties that attended each, yet hope deſerted not his breaſt.

To poſſeſs Cora is impoſſible, but not to have known how to pleaſe her: "and if ſhe loves me," ſays he, "if ſhe knows that I adore her, if our "hearts correſpond to each other, the conſci-"ouſneſs of it will afford conſolation; ah! this "would ſuffice."

In ruminating inceſſantly upon her, a thouſand times a day would he experience every emotion of this wayward love. Conſideration, however,

at length reſtored him to himſelf, and diſcovered to him the imprudence and ſhame of his tranſports. What! amongſt a religious people to attempt a ſacrilegious violation of their laws! In the court of a King, his friend, to trample on the rights of hoſpitality! to expoſe the object of his affection to diſgrace, and to the puniſhment inevitably connected with the forgetfulneſs of her vows! Theſe were ſo many crimes, and ſo great, that each of them ſeparately made Alonzo tremble. He immediately repelled the thought, and reſolved that it ſhould never overcome him.

Seeking to ſoothe his melancholy in ſolitude, he retired to the ſacred incloſure where Cora was confined. The bounds were extenſive and overſhadowed by thick trees, whoſe ſtately height added a ſolemnity to the venerable ſcene. "Beneath theſe ſhades," ſaid he, "the lovely Cora "enjoys the cooling breeze. Alas! perhaps ſhe "there ſighs; and neither pity nor love will "dare to break her bonds. Theſe walls are "high, and the guard is watchful; but how "eaſy would it be to ſurmount them! Their "ſanctity is their beſt protection. Love, the "fatal enemy to repoſe and innocence, love "like mine the inhabitants of theſe regions have "never felt. The habit of deſiring only what

"is

" is permitted, conducts them quietly along the " narrow path which their laws preſcribed. But " how cruel are thoſe laws, to which youth, " beauty, and love, are the ſorrowful victims! " How juſt and generous would it be to ſet " them free!" Having uttered theſe words, he trembled at the riſing emotion of his heart, and retired form the palace. " Ah!" ſays he, " and " is this then the glorious deſign which brought " me to the Inca's court! I profeſſed myſelf a " hero, and at laſt am found a prefidious, weak, " and deſpicable raviſher."

Thus his virtue ſtruggled, and would have proved victorious, had not a terrible event given an aſcendancy over it, to fear and compaſſion.

CHAP. XXVIII.

HAPPY are the people that cultivate thoſe vallies and hills which the ſea ſurrounds, and the ſubſidings of its ſurges compoſe! The ſhepherd there attends his flock without alarms; and the huſbandman ſows his grain, and reaps its produce in peace. But wretched are the inhabitants of thoſe lofty mountains, whoſe feet the

the ocean never laves, and whoſe ſummits pierce the clouds! Among theſe the ſubterranean fires, that rage inceſſantly beneath, burſt forth in dreadful fury, and from thoſe immenſe maſſes of calcined rocks, fluid metals, aſhes, and lava, which collect in heaps as they fall around the yawning chaſms through which they forced their way. Pitiable is the lot of thoſe whom the fertility of this deceitful ſoil allures! the flowers, the fruits, and the crops with which it abounds ſerve but to hide the gulf beneath. The principles of fertility, which penetrate the earth, are but exhalations of that fire by which it is conſumed: the increaſe of its abundance is the preſage of its ruin; and it ſwallows up its inhabitants in the midſt of plenty. Such is the climate of Quito. The ſite of this city was ſubject to a terrible volcano *, and its foundations had been diſturbed by frequent concuſſions.

When the Indians were one day diſperſed in the fields ploughing, ſowing, and reaping (for this rich valley preſented at once to the eye the various labours of the year) and the daughters of the Sun, in the receſſes of their palace, were

* *A terrible volcano.*] Pichencha; *ſee* the deſcription of this volcano and its eruption in 1538 and 1660, in the relation of M. de la Condamine's voyage.

employed

employed in ſpinning and weaving the precious texture of wool, to clothe the Pontiff and the King, a ſullen ſound was heard at firſt in the entrails of the volcano, reſembling that of the ſea when a tempeſt is collecting. By degrees it deepens, and at length becomes a low and hollow murmur. The earth trembles; a rumbling noiſe is heard in the air, and black vapours conceal the ſky: the temple and the palace totter, and threaten to fall in ruins; the mountain heaves, and its ſummit rends aſunder by the winds compreſſed within it: torrents of liquid lava and wreaths of reddening ſmoke enkindle, and dart forth, from the bottom of the abyſs, in rapid whirls, immenſe ſhivers of burning rocks. What a majeſtic and awful picture! to behold rivers of fire urging their headlong courſe in glittering floods over immenſe heaps of ſnow, and excavating in them a deep and ample bed!

Within and without the walls deſolation, aſtoniſhment, and terror at once prevail. The huſbandman fears to break the ſurface of the earth, which fluctuates like the ſea beneath his feet. Amongſt the Prieſts of the Sun, ſome trembling ruſh out of the temple; others in conſternation cling to the altar of their God. The virgins diſtracted deſert the palace, the roofs of which threaten to deſcend upon their heads;

heads; and running into the wide incloſure, all pale and diſhevelled, they extend their timid hands towards thoſe walls from which even pity herſelf durſt not offer them relief.

Alonzo alone, wandering round this incloſure, heard their plaintive cries. In this univerſal danger he trembled only for Cora. Every cry that pierced his ear ſeemed to come from her alone. Wild, and ſhuddering with grief and fear, like a ring-dove that hovers with trembling wings over the priſon in which his companion is confined; or rather like the lioneſs who, with glowing eyes, roams and roars around the ſnare in which her young are taken, he ſearches and at length diſcovers a paſſage through the ruins. Tranſported with joy he climbs the fragments of the ſacred wall, and enters this aſylum, which no mortal before him had ever entered. Darkneſs favoured him: the gloomy and melancholy light of day had given place to the night, which was illuminated only by the ſtreams of fire thrown forth from the mountain; and this dreadful light, like that of Erebus, ſerved only to diſcover to the eyes of Alonzo, the Prieſteſſes of the Sun, like wandering ſhades, running in their terror through the gardens of the palace.

Any

Any other eyes than thoſe of a lover, occupied entirely with the object of his paſſion, would have ſought in vain to diſtinguiſh one of them from the reſt. Alonzo knew Cora again. The graces, which in her terror, had not forſaken her, rendered her at a diſtance conſpicuous to her lover. He ſuppreſſed his firſt tranſports for fear of alarming her; and advancing with caution, "Cora," ſays he, in a tone of the ſweeteſt ſenſibility, "a God watches over us "and defends our lives." Cora, intimidated at his addreſs, immediately ſtops; at the ſame inſtant the earth quakes, and the mountain, with a loud noiſe, caſts forth a blaze of light, which, amidſt the ſurrounding darkneſs, diſcovers to the view of the Prieſteſs, Alonzo, with open arms.

Whether from the ſudden emotion of ſurprize, or perhaps of love, Cora threw himſelf forwards, and fell almoſt lifeleſs into the arms of the Spaniard. He ſupported and revived her, and endeavoured to diſſipate her alarm. "O "thou," ſays he, "whom I have adored from "the moment I firſt ſaw thee in the temple! thou "from whom I live, Cora, be not afraid: it is "Heaven hath ſent me to deliver thee. Follow "me. Let us quit theſe fatal ſcenes; ſuffer "me to ſave thee."

Cora,

Cora, feeble and trembling, yielded to his intreaty. He claſped her to his boſom, and bore her without difficulty over the broken wall. The firſt retirement that occurred to his thoughts was the valley of Capana, which belonged to the Cacique, who was the friend of Las-Caſas.

"Whither go I?" ſays Cora. "My ſenſes "are diſordered by affright. I know not where, "nor even with whom I am. What will be- "come of me? O pity me!"——"You are," replies Alonzo, "under the protection of a "man who lives only for you. I would con- "duct you far from danger, to a delightful "valley where a Cacique, my friend, will re- "ceive you as his daughter."—"Ah, rather," ſays ſhe, "conceal me from every eye. I have "forfeited my life, and what is far more dear. "You know not how ſevere a law you cauſe "me to violate. Eſcaped from this aſylum, "where can I live concealed? I am following "the footſteps of a man, after having abjured "the ſex for ever. To what do you expoſe me? "Ah! rather let me periſh."

"Cora," anſwers Alonzo, "the firſt duty of "humanity, and that to which the earlieſt ten- "dency of nature inclines us, is ſelf-preſerva- "tion. At the moment when death ſurround- "ed and purſued you, there was neither vow

"nor

"nor law which muſt not ſubmit to this invin-
"cible impulſe. To-morrow, when all will
"be calm, before the dawn, you may go back
"to thoſe gardens where your terrified compa-
"nions will have paſſed the night, and the
"ſecret of your abſence will never be diſcover-
"ed."

In the mean time the danger diminiſhed, and ſoon diſappeared. The earth ceaſed to tremble, and the noiſe of the volcano abated. The pyramid of fire on the top of the mountain burnt with leſs fury, and appeared to decline; the black volumes of ſmoke, which darkened the heavens, began to be diſſipated, a breeze from the eaſt driving them off towards the ſea. The ſky, by degrees, recovered its azure, and the moon, by her ſoothing ſplendor, ſeemed diſpoſed to reſtore tranquillity to nature.

Alonzo and his tender companion were now croſſing the delightful meadows, in which a thouſand trees, bending with fruit, interwove their branches with each other. The trembling moonbeams, breaking through the foliage, ſhed a golden verdure upon the graſs beneath. "Reſt your-
"ſelf, my dear Cora," ſays Alonzo, "here re-
"poſe, and, in the calm and ſilence of an indul-
"gent night, permit me to ſatiate my ſoul with
"the pleaſure of viewing you, and adoring your

"numberleſs charms." Cora conſented to ſit down. Alonzo's firſt care was to pluck the fruits that hung around him and preſent to her. The delicious ſavint, the palta ſtill more pleaſing, the nut of the coco, and its refreſhing juice, ſupplied this ſimple feaſt.

Sitting at the knees of Cora, Alonzo ſcarcely breathed. The ſolicitude, the ſurprize, that fearful timidity which blends itſelf with the impetuoſity of deſire, and is redoubled at the approach of enjoyment, ſuſpended his impatience. He preſſed with his hands and applied to his lips the trembling hand of Cora. "Daughter of "Heaven," ſays he to her, "and is it thee then "that I poſſeſs? thee, the ſole object of my "wiſhes? Who could have thought that a "prodigy at which nature ſhudders, ſhould "prove the means of our meeting, and that the "earth ſhould be ſtricken with terror only to "draw off the prying eyes of thy inhuman "guard? A God, without doubt, compaſſion-"ates my love and my diſtreſs. Ah! let us "avail ourſelves of his offered favour. We are "alone, free from reſtraint, and concealed from "every witneſs but the night, which never be-"trays the tender ſecrets of love. But theſe "precious moments are fleeting, let us improve "the next; and, if I am dear to thee, Cora,

"bid

"bid me *be happy.*"——"Be happy," ſhe replied; and from that inſtant a cloud obſcured futurity.

Every object to their eyes now wore new beauty. The ſerenity of the night, the ſolitude and ſilence which prevailed around them, diffuſed a charm they had never felt before. "Ah! "delicious retreat!" ſaid Cora: "Why "ſeek another aſylum? This mild radiance, "this verdant ſeat, theſe trees, all ſeem to aſk, "Whither would you go? Where can you be "more happy than with us?"—"O dear part-"ner of my ſoul," ſaid Alonzo, "thus mayeſt "thou be ever pleaſed with me! Here let us "paſs the night, and fly with the morning's "dawn from theſe ſcenes of thy captivity. "Let us .... But how know I where deſtiny "may lead us? Were it to ſome dreary cave, "I ſhould there live happy with thee; but "without thee ceaſe to be." Such was the language which his fooliſh paſſion ſuggeſted to Alonzo. Cora preſſed him in her arms, and he felt the tears from her eyes flow down his cheek. "My friend," ſays ſhe, "if it be poſſible, let "us force from our boſoms the preſage that af-"flicts us. While in your company I would "confine my thoughts to you alone: Why "ſhould the bleſſing which I ſo ardently de-

"fired, be mingled with the bitterneſs of "grief!"

Cora as yet knew not the name of her lover; ſhe requeſted to hear it, and a thouſand times pronounced it. He ſpoke to her of his country, and even flattered her with the pleaſing hope of one day re-viſiting, with her, his native place. In this he meant not to deceive her, but the agreeable illuſion ſoon yielded to bitter reflexion. Every emotion of their ſouls was at length ſuſpended by ſlumber; and Cora, till break of day, repoſed on the knees of Alonzo.

The birds, awakened by the morning ſtar, awoke Alonzo with their ſongs. He opened his eyes and beheld Cora: a thouſand charms attract his view. Applying his mouth to her roſy lips, on which pleaſure ſat ſmiling, he catches her breath; and his ſoul flies thither attracted by the fragrance.

Cora awakes; a confuſed agitation of fear and joy diſcovers the emotion of her heart. "And "is it thou," ſays ſhe, throwing herſelf into the embraces of Alonzo, "and do I again find "thee? Ah! I thought thee loſt for ever."— "No, Cora, be aſſured, we ſhall never, never "part. But let us haſte: ſee the dawn appears. "Let us aſcend the mountains, and confiding "in nature, who ſuſtains the inhabitants of the "foreſts

" foreſts in their haunts, ſeek freedom with me,
" which, next to love, is the firſt of bleſſings."
" Ah! dear Alonzo," ſays Cora, " were I but
" alone with you in thoſe foreſts where ſhe
" reigns, and unknown to all the world beſide!"
—In uttering theſe words, ſhe preſſed him in her arms and trembled, while her eyes ſuffuſed in tears, were fixed on his. Affected and alarmed at her anxiety, he urged her to communicate the cauſe. She ſhudders at the diſtreſs which her words muſt give him, but at length yielding to his importunity, " Delight of my ſoul, my
" dear Alonzo," ſays ſhe, " my heart is rent,
" as thine will be, but forgive me: I am bound
" by a ſacred and terrible duty, which tears me
" from your arms; and from this moment I
" muſt bid you farewell for ever."——" Ah!
" what ſay you, cruel Cora!"——" Hear me.
" When I was devoted at the altar, my parents
" became ſureties for my fidelity. The blood
" of a father and a mother is the pledge of my
" vows. A fugitive and perjured, I give up
" them to torture; my crime devolves on them,
" and they muſt bear the puniſhment: ſuch is
" the rigour of the law."——" O God!—You
" tremble!—Unhappy woman! what have you
" done? What have I myſelf done?" cries he, falling with his face on the ground and rending

his hair. "Why did you not ſooner diſcover to "me the abyſs into which I was falling, and "dragging you? .... Leave me. Thy love, "thy grief, thy tears redouble my horror .... "What! would you that I ſhould conduct you "back? That to me would be fatal..... To "retain you! Oh! no; I am not a monſter. I "will never ſuffer you to become a parricide. I "will never ſuffer it. She goes then .... "Cruel .... Stop! Stop! I die."

The diſtreſſed Cora, on hearing his cries, returned all-trembling, and fell at his knees. He views her, embraces her, wets her with his tears, feels himſelf bathed with hers, ſwears to her eternal love; and, in the exceſs of grief, grows wild and again relapſes. "What ſhall we do?" ſays Cora, "you ſee it is day. If we heſitate, "it will be too late; and my father, my mother, "and their children muſt periſh. Methinks "I already ſee the kindling flames."—"Come "then, come," ſays he, with a gloomy look and an air of deep deſpondence; and inſtantly arming himſelf with that elevated fortitude which tramples under foot the paſſions, he takes her hand, and, in haſte, leads her back, pale and trembling, to the foot of thoſe walls, within which ſhe goes to conceal her crime, her love, and her deſpair.

Love

Love in the ſoul of Cora, till the moment of this fatal interview, had been nothing more than a confuſed and vague delirium: Its power ſhe was ignorant of, till ſhe had poſſeſſed the object. Her paſſion in becoming more determinate, had redoubled its violence; remembrance and regret ſoſtered it; and deſire, void of hope, ever fallacious, and increaſing in ardour, was its perpetual attendant. But it was without remorſe at leaſt, and without dread of futurity. The confuſion of the night, in which the attention of every one had been abſorbed by a regard for their own ſafety, prevented the detection of her flight and her abſence; ſhe thought it no crime to wander where danger, fear and love had driven her. Her moſt diſtreſsful forebodings aroſe from the apprehenſion that the fire, which devoured her, would never be extinguiſhed. More unhappy is the ſtate of her lover. He experiences the ſame ſuffering, and a corroding ſolicitude beſide, which inceſſantly torments him.

O! under what various and cruel forms does love tyranniſe over the heart! Alonza ſhuddered leſt he ſhould become a father; and this danger, which innocence had concealed from the eyes of Cora, was continually preſent to his own. He reviewed with terror the moſt delightful moments of his life, and deteſted the love

love which had made him happy. It was nevertheleſs neceſſary for him to ſet out on his embaſſy. But in going from Quito, he felt his ſoul attracted by an irreſiſtible force, to diſengage itſelf from him, and ruſh back towards thoſe walls within which Cora ſighed.

CHAP. XXIX.

A Level road carried thro' mountains, over vallies and torrents *, and reaching from one extremity of the empire to the other, preſented a ſtupendous monument of the grandeur of the Incas; but neither this, nor the arſenals which at proper intervals were placed upon it; neither the receptacles which were always open for the accommodation of travellers; nor the fortreſſes and temples which perpetually occurred; neither the canals, thro' which the currents of rivers † were diverted into the champaign

* *Thro' mountains, over vallies and torrents.*] The road from Quito to Cuſco, and beyond, was five hundred leagues. It was made in the reign of *Huaïna Capac;* in whoſe reign alſo another of the ſame extent was carried thro' the flat country, and ſeveral more from the center of the Empire, to its extremities. They conſiſted of cauſeways forty feet wide, and were raiſed on the vallies to the height of the hills.

† *Canals.*] One of theſe on the Weſtern plains extended a hundred and fifty leagues from South to North.

country,

country, nor the wonders of a new climate, could efface Cora from the thoughts of Alonzo. Her image, though always excluded with a ſigh, inceſſantly returned.

At length however the voice of friendſhip obtained an audience. Alonzo at once awoke from his delirium; and as he approached Cuſco, the object of his embaſſy occupied his attention. He diſpatched three Caciques to acquaint the monarch that "a man, born beyond the ſeas, and "on the ſhores where the ſun ariſes, a Caſtilian, "who had been received in the court of his bro-"ther, was coming to ſee him, and to bring him "the words of peace."

The fame of the Caſtilians had arrived at Cuſco; and the name already become terrible, ſtruck the haughty Huaſcar. He ſent a part of his court to meet Alonzo; and himſelf in all the majeſtic ſplendor of the Incas, elevated on a throne of gold, in a palace whoſe ceiling, and walls were covered with the ſame ſhining metal, having twenty Caciques at his feet, and at his ſide twenty tribes of Incas, deſcendants from Manco, received him.

Alonzo, who, before, had never ſeen ſo magnificent a ſpectacle, was aſtoniſhed. The Prince, with a grace equal to his dignity, beckoned to him to approach, and ſpeak.

"Inca,"

"Inca," ſays Alonzo to him, "a virtuous and "affectionate brother is the gift of Heaven; a "gift of Heaven, not leſs rare, is a faithful "friend. You may rejoice, ſince, in the King "of Quito, Heaven has given you both. I know "his ſoul; and my heart, which hath never yet "learnt to diſſemble, correſponds to his. You "are both threatened by a formidable enemy, "who is advancing againſt you from the Eaſt. "You will both need mutual help to reſiſt his "attacks. United you may conquer; disjoined "you are vanquiſhed. The Inca, your bro-"ther, applies to you for aid, and offers his arms "in return. This is the purport of my com-"miſſion."

"I was deſirous to hear you," anſwered the Inca, "although ſent hither by a rebel; but, "firſt, let me aſk, are not you yourſelf one of "thoſe very ſtrangers, who have lately arrived "on our ſhores, and who have ſpread terror "through the valley? You call yourſelf a Caſti-"lian; it is, I think, the name they bear; they "profeſs to come, like you, from the ſhores of the "Eaſt."

"Yes," replied Alonzo, "I am one of "thoſe who appeared on this coaſt. In their "ſteps I ſought for glory, but finding only "crimes, I forſook them. I ſincerely love

"and

" and honour rectitude and greatneſs of ſoul, and " from hence ariſes my attachment to the gene- " rous Prince, who now, in my words, addreſſes " you. If both, ſprung from the ſame blood, " and ſons of one father, love each other and " live in peace, you will be happy and power- " ful."

" If he remembers," ſays Huaſcar, " of what " father we were born, let him recollect, alſo, the " difference ariſing from our birth. The Sun " hath given but one maſter to this empire; the " reign of his ſon ſhould reſemble his own. He " hath no equal in heaven, and I would have none " on earth."

" Inca," replies Alonzo, " I would fain adopt " your language, and ſuppoſe, what you believe. " Have you not ſo much regard for mankind and " eſteem for the laws of your anceſtors, as to wiſh " that the univerſe might be governed by thoſe " peaceful inſtitutions?"

" Doubtleſs," anſwers the Inca, " I both wiſh " and hope it. It is the will of the Sun, and time " will ſee it accompliſhed."

" And then," aſks Alonzo, " will the world " have but one King, as it has but one Sun? " Can the wiſdom of one man extend his re- " gards as far as the orb of day extends his " beams? You cannot believe it; confeſs then

" that

"that as your vigilance is circumſcribed, ſo your "power ought to be, and that it would be unjuſt "to deſire poſſeſſions which you could not go-"vern."

"Stranger," ſays the Inca interrupting him, "how great is thine audacity to come hither with "a view to limit my power?"

"It is not I that ſets limits to it, but nature," ſays Alonzo: "I only ſpeak what it hath "done. I only remind you that you are a weak "man, when your ambition would make you a "God."

"I am a man, but I am King," replies the Inca; "and this title ſhould teach thee the re-"ſpect that is my due."

"Know," ſays Alonzo, "that my equals ad-"dreſs Kings without flattery, and reſpect them "without fear. It is for you alone to behold me "at your feet; but begin with being juſt, and ho-"nour the memory of your father who himſelf "was a King. From his hand your brother re-"ceived that ſceptre, which you now claim. In "diſavowing his gift, you inſult him in his grave, "and trample on his aſhes."

The Inca trembled, but his pride predominated over his piety. "My father," ſays he, "was grown old; and man impaired by age is "credulous, and eaſily wrought upon. He "yielded

"yielded to the artifices of an ambitious wo-
"man; and, for the ſon of a ſtranger ſupplanted
"him, whom the wiſe laws of Manco had no-
"minated his heir."

"He remitted to you," ſays Alonzo, "all he
"received, and hath diſpoſed of no more than he
"acquired by conqueſt."

"If like him, each of our Kings," ſays the Prince, "had diſſipated his own acquiſitions, "where now had been this empire? Unity of "power conſtitutes its grandeur and ſtrength; "and my father, who received it from his an-"ceſtors entire, ought to have transferred it "unſevered. He was ſurpriſed into error, and "without ceaſing to honour his virtue, or re-"vere his aſhes, I may diſavow the weakneſs "of a moment, which made him forgetful of "my rights."

"Learn," ſays Alonzo, "that at the North "of theſe climates, an empire as vaſt, and "more powerful than yours, hath been ra-"vaged, deſtroyed, and overwhelmed with "the blood of its inhabitants, in conſe-"quence of inteſtine diviſion. Its Princes, "with difficulty eſcaped from the ſword of the "conqueror, have ſought refuge in the court "of the Inca, your brother; and their misfor-"tune confirms my prediction. A terrible

" enemy will find you, both, weakened and " exhauſted by each other. Ah! regard then " the preſervation of your empire; and when " the thunder rolls over your head, and the " abyſs yawns beneath your feet, tremble, un- " happy Prince; inſtead of threatening, do you " yourſelf tremble."

The whole court, which heard him, appeared diſturbed at his language; the Inca himſelf was moved; but diſſembling his fear under the exterior of pride: " It belongs to the uſurper," ſays he, " to prevent the evils of which he will " be the cauſe, and to ſubmit himſelf to my " laws."

" Hope it not," ſays Alonzo, ſurpriſed at his inflexibility. " Ataliba, crowned by a dy- " ing father, will never think himſelf uſurping " that, which his father delegated to him. His " will he regards as an inviolable law. His " throne he will never relinquiſh but with " the laſt gaſp of life: I repeat his very " words. It is for you then to conſider, whe- " ther you will imbrue your hands in the blood " of a brother, a virtuous brother, who loves " you; who accounts it his glory and his hap- " pineſs to be your ally and your moſt affecti- " onate friend; who conjures you, in the name " of your father, not to revoke his gifts; in the " name

"name both of his people and your own, not "to urge him to an impious war. Diſpoſe of "him and his arms; he fears not war: his "ſtandards are ſurrounded by a faithful and "valiant people; twenty Kings attend him, "not leſs devoted to him than myſelf. All "he fears is to ſpill the blood of his friends, "his family and his people, who, having been "the ſubjects of your father, and born under "the ſame laws, are his children as well as "yours. Like him, conſult your heart; it "muſt be good, magnanimous, and ſenſible, at "leaſt, to pity. It is not my preſent intention "to decide on your rights; ſuch conteſts can "be determined by arms alone. The queſtion "now is, who will loſe moſt by yielding to the "other? On his ſide, a kingdom is depend-"ing, but on yours, a province only, which "can bring you no new acceſſion of glory, "power, or greatneſs. He defends, together "with his crown, and his honour, the honour "alſo of his father: And to theſe intereſts, what "do you oppoſe? The pride of not allowing "a diviſion! And ſhould this then kindle be-"tween you the flames of a civil war, at the "inſtant when a common danger incites you to "unite?"

The haughty Huaſcar would hear no more. But the undaunted frankneſs and the elevated

ſentiments of Alonzo, impreſſed every perſon preſent with wonder and reſpect, not excepting even the Inca himſelf.

"I know not," ſays he, "how it is, but this "race of men have ſomething in them com- "manding and ſuperior to us. I would gain "the good-will and eſteem of this man. Let "every honour be paid him which is due to his "office, and the authority with which he is in- "veſted."

He admitted him to his table; and conver- ſing with him, in the familiar tone of friend- ſhip: "Caſtilian," ſays he, "I am deſirous of "acceding, as far as I can with honour, to the "peace you propoſe. Let Ataliba retain the "bequeſt; let him reign at Quito; I con- "ſent to it, if, as a tributary of the empire, "he will render homage to the eldeſt ſon of the "Sun."

Though there was but little reaſon to preſume that Ataliba would ſubmit to this condition, yet Alonzo did not think himſelf authoriſed to re- ject the propoſition without acquainting him with it; and while he waited the reſult of his meſ- ſage, his leiſure was employed in viewing the decorations of this flouriſhing city and its pre- cincts.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXX.

THE temple of the Sun, the palaces of the Monarch, the Incas, and the Virgins; the fortreſs with the triple incloſure, which commanded, and protected the city; the canals from the neighbouring mountains, which plentifully ſupplied it with their clear and ſalutary ſtreams; the extenſive and magnificent ſquares that adorned it, and thoſe monuments, of which nothing but the deplorable ruins now remain, filled Alonzo with admiration. "And "have all theſe prodigies," ſays he, "been "effected by the hand of man, without the "aid of iron, or the mechanic arts! Hath it "tranſported from their quarries thoſe unwieldy "rocks? Hath it reared theſe walls, whoſe ſtruc- "ture aſtoniſhes me, and whoſe ſolidity will yield "only to the attacks of time, and the diſſolution "of the earth itſelf? Can every thing then be "ſupplied by labour and perſeverance?"

But he beheld, with dread, thoſe incredible quantities of gold, which occupied the place of iron, wood, and clay; and every where glittered

his eyes *. "Ah!" ſays he, with a ſigh, "if "ever European avarice ſhould diſcover theſe trea- "ſures, with what greedy fury would it haſte to "devour them!"

At Cuſco, the worſhip of the Sun was celebrated with unrivalled grandeur. The magnificence of the temple, the ſplendor of the court, the affluence of the people, the order of the Prieſts, and the chorus of ſelect Virgins †, the greatneſs of whoſe numbers inſpired reſpect, every thing in this city gave ſo auguſt an appearance to the pomp of their worſhip, as penetrated even Alonzo with wonder.

Their feſtivals conſiſted of rites, games, entertainments, and ſacrifices, proper to the occaſion. The feſtival of marriage, now to be celebrated, was diſtinguiſhed by the ſacred gift of fire. Alonzo was preſent. The appointed day was that on which the Sun, having terminated his ſouthern courſe, reſted on the tropic to return towards the North.

They attentively watched the inſtant, when his orb being on the decline, the myſterious co-

* *Every where glittered in his eyes.*] Hiſtorians have greatly exaggerated in their accounts of the wealth of Peru. "There "were," ſays Garcilaſſo, "piles of ingots of gold, granaries "full of grains of gold," &c.

† At Cuſco there were fifteen hundred.

lumns

lumns caſt a ſhadow towards the Eaſt, of equal length to themſelves; and then the Inca, proſtrating himſelf before the Sun, his father, thus addreſſed him: "Beneficent God, thou art now "receding from us to reſtore life and joy to the "inhabitants of another hemiſphere, whom, "far from thee, Winter, the offspring of Night, "afflicts; we do not murmur. Thou wouldſt "not be juſt, didſt thou confine thy animating "preſence to us alone, and for the ſake of thy "children forget the reſt of the world. Fol-"low thy courſe; but leave us, as a pledge of "thy goodneſs, an emanation of thyſelf; and "let the fire of thy rays, cheriſhed on theſe "altars, diffuſe among thy people conſolation "in thine abſence, and aſſurance of thy re-"turn."

Having concluded his addreſs, he preſented to the Sun, the hollow ſurface of a poliſhed chryſtal *, ſet in gold, an artifice, kept in myſterious ſecrecy from the people, and known only to the Incas. The rays, croſſing each other in a point, fell on a pile of cedar and aloes, which, imme-

* *A chryſtal.*) They had rock chryſtal. Garcilaſſo ſays, that they drew fire from the Sun by means of a ſmall cup of gold, *like the half of an orange*, which the High-Prieſt wore like a bracelet.

diately

his eyes *. "Ah!" ſays he, with a ſigh, "if "ever European avarice ſhould diſcover theſe trea-"ſures, with what greedy fury would it haſte to "devour them!"

At Cuſco, the worſhip of the Sun was celebrated with unrivalled grandeur. The magnificence of the temple, the ſplendor of the court, the affluence of the people, the order of the Prieſts, and the chorus of ſelect Virgins †, the greatneſs of whoſe numbers inſpired reſpect, every thing in this city gave ſo auguſt an appearance to the pomp of their worſhip, as penetrated even Alonzo with wonder.

Their feſtivals conſiſted of rites, games, entertainments, and ſacrifices, proper to the occaſion. The feſtival of marriage, now to be celebrated, was diſtinguiſhed by the ſacred gift of fire. Alonzo was preſent. The appointed day was that on which the Sun, having terminated his ſouthern courſe, reſted on the tropic to return towards the North.

They attentively watched the inſtant, when his orb being on the decline, the myſterious co-

* *Every where glittered in his eyes.*] Hiſtorians have greatly exaggerated in their accounts of the wealth of Peru. "There "were," ſays Garcilaſſo, "piles of ingots of gold, granaries "full of grains of gold," &c.

† At Cuſco there were fifteen hundred.

lumns caſt a ſhadow towards the Eaſt, of equal length to themſelves; and then the Inca, proſtrating himſelf before the Sun, his father, thus addreſſed him: "Beneficent God, thou art now "receding from us to reſtore life and joy to the "inhabitants of another hemiſphere, whom, "far from thee, Winter, the offspring of Night, "afflicts; we do not murmur. Thou wouldſt "not be juſt, didſt thou confine thy animating "preſence to us alone, and for the ſake of thy "children forget the reſt of the world. Fol-"low thy courſe; but leave us, as a pledge of "thy goodneſs, an emanation of thyſelf; and "let the fire of thy rays, cheriſhed on theſe "altars, diffuſe among thy people conſolation "in thine abſence, and aſſurance of thy re-"turn."

Having concluded his addreſs, he preſented to the Sun, the hollow ſurface of a poliſhed chryſtal *, ſet in gold, an artifice, kept in myſterious ſecrecy from the people, and known only to the Incas. The rays, croſſing each other in a point, fell on a pile of cedar and aloes, which, imme-

* *A chryſtal.*) They had rock chryſtal. Garcilaſſo ſays, that they drew fire from the Sun by means of a ſmall cup of gold, *like the half of an orange*, which the High-Prieſt wore like a bracelet.

diately

diately kindling, perfumed the air with the moſt grateful fragrance *.

It was thus that the wife Manco exhibited to the Indians an atteſtation from the Sun himſelf, that he had ſent him to give them laws. "O "Sun," ſaid he, "if I am thine offspring, "let thy rays, from the ſummit of heaven, "kindle this pile, which my hand conſecrates "to thee;" and the pile was inſtantly inflamed.

The multitude, at the ſight of this prodigy, which was annually renewed, broke forth into exclamations of joy; and, each being eager to

* *There is ſo intimate a reſemblance between the fact here ſuppoſed by M.* MARMONTEL, *and a paſſage in the* ΛΙΘΙΚΑ *of* ORPHEUS, *as will appear to the reader extraordinary, if the former hath not borrowed it from the latter.*

ΚΡΥΣΤΑΛΛΟΣ.

Κρύσαλλον φαέθοντα διαυγέα λάζεο χερσὶ
Λᾶαν, ἀπόῤῥοιαν περιφεγγέος ἀμβρότε αἴγλης·
Αἰθέρι δ' ἀθανάτων μέγα τέρπεται ἄφθιτον ἦτορ.
Τόν κ' εἴπερ μετὰ χεῖρας ἔχων περὶ νηὸν ἵκηαι,
Οὔτις τοι μακάρων ἀρνήσεται εὐχαλῆσι.
Κέκλυθι δ' ὄφρα μάθοις μένος ἀργεννοῖο λίθοιο·
Εἰ γὰρ ἄτερ κρατεροῖο θέλεις πυρὸς ἐς φλόγας ὄρσαι,
Κέκλομαι αὐαλέαν μιν ὑπὲρ δαΐδων καταθεῖναι·
Αὐτὰρ ὅγ' ἠελίοιο καταντίον αὐγάζοντος
Αὐτίχ' ὑπὲρ δαΐδων ὀλίγην ἀκτῖνα τανύσσει.
Ἡ δ' ὅτε καρφαλέης τε θίγῃ καὶ πίονος ὕλης,
Καπνὸν, ἔπειτα δὲ πῦρ ὀλίγον, μετὰ δὲ φλόγα πολλὴν
Ὀρσει.——

procure

procure a ſpark of this ſacred fire, the Monarch imparted it to the Incas, and they to the people, while the Prieſts were occupied in preſerving it upon the altar.

Then the lovers, who were arrived at the nuptial age advanced *; and nothing could be more ſtriking than the immenſe circle compoſed of youth in the bloſſom of life, who conſtituted the ſtrength and hope of the ſtate, demanding the right of giving birth to others, and inriching it in their turn with a new race. Health, the daughter of labour, there reigned, in union with beauty, or ſupplied the want of it.

"Children of the ſtate," ſays the Prince, "it now expects from you the price of your "birth. Every man who regards life as a "bleſſing is obliged to tranſmit it, and multi-"ply the gift. He alone is exempt from giving "being to others to whom life is a curſe. If "any ſuch perſon be among you, let him ſpeak; "let him declare the cauſe of his hatred to life, "and I am ready to hear his complaints. But "ſuch of you as peacefully enjoy the benefits "of the Sun, my father, approach, mutually "plight your faith, engage to continue your

* *The nuptial age.*] The ſame author informs us that this was at twenty-five for men, and twenty years for women.

"race

" race and perpetuate the number of the hap-
" py."

Not a complaint was uttered; and a thouſand couples, in turn, preſented themſelves before him. " Love one another, obſerve the " laws, adore the Sun, my father," ſaid the Prince to them; and as an emblem of their united labours and cares, in joining their hands, he cauſed them to touch the ancient ſpade of Manco, and the diſtaff of Oello, his laborious companion.

Alonzo, viewing this circle of youthful beauties, ſaid to himſelf with a ſigh: " Ah! Cora, " heavenly maid, if thou wert preſent, this whole " aſſemblage of charms would diſappear in the " effulgence of thine."

One of the young brides approached the Inca, with her eyes ſuffuſed in tears. The Prince perceiving it, enquired into the cauſe of her diſtreſs. Timidity and a painful reſerve prevented her from anſwering. The Inca condeſcended to encourage her. " Alas!" ſays ſhe, " I hoped to have conſoled the lover of my " ſiſter: for ſhe is ſo lovely that they have re-
" ſerved her for the temple; and the unfortunate " Ircilo, to whom my father refuſed her, came " and poured forth his ſorrows to me." " Elina," ſays he, " one day, you are not as " beautiful,

" beautiful, but you are not leſs gentle: your heart " is good and compaſſionate; you have a tender " regard for Meloe; I know how dear you are " to her, and I wiſh to behold her in you: in " pity to me ſupply her place. At firſt I refu- " ſed; but Meloe, diſſolved in tears, importuned " me to become her ſubſtitute." " Who," ſays ſhe, " will conſole him, if you will not? Be- " hold how his diſappointment afflicts him." " I conſent," replied I to her, " if that will con- " ſole him." " He thinks it will; he promiſes it " ſhall. But now he confeſſes to me that he can " love no one but her, and that he ſhall for ever " lament the loſs of her."

The Inca ſent for the father of Elina and Meloe. " Bring Meloe to me," ſays he. " You " have reſerved her for the temple, but thoſe " hearts, which the Sun requires, muſt be free, " and her's is not. She loves this young man; " and it is my will that he be her huſband. As " for Elina, I will take care to chooſe one, who " ſhall deſerve her."

The father obeyed. Meloe approached diſtreſſed and trembling. But, when ſhe ſaw Ircilo, and heard that it was to him her hand ſhould be given, her beauty revived; an emotion of delight overſpread her face, and directed her eyes full of tenderneſs towards thoſe of her young lover: " Will

" Will you then," ſays ſhe, " be afflicted no more? " My wiſh is completed."

A new couple preſent themſelves, and, at the ſame inſtant, a young man forcing his way through the crowd, ruſhes between them, and falling at the feet of the Inca; " Son of the Sun," cries he, " prevent Oſai from violating her en- " gagement to me. It is I whom ſhe loves. She " is haſtening to make herſelf unhappy, by making " me miſerable."

The King ſurprized at his audacity, but touched by his deſpair, permitted him to ſpeak. " Inca," ſays he, " deign to hear me. It was " in the ſeaſon of harveſt, when I being buſily " occupied in collecting the produce of my fa- " ther's fields, was informed that the harveſt of " her father would the next day begin. Alas!" ſays I, " to-morrow they will reap the crop of " the father of Oſai; my rivals will there aſ- " ſemble: how unfortunate for me if I ſhould " be abſent! Let us haſten, and redouble our " efforts to finiſh our harveſt. It was ended, " and I, exhauſted with fatigue, went to repoſe. " Deceived by my ſlumber, I awoke not till " your father had enlightened the world. Grie- " ving at my miſhap, I came and found Oſai " in the fields, with young Mayobé, who, from " the dawn, had been labouring with her."

" Go,"

"Go," ſays ſhe to me, with contempt, "you "neither love me, nor regard my father: love "and friendſhip would have been more dili- "gent. She would not hear my excuſe, and "ever ſince hath ſhunned and fled me. But ſhe "ſtill loves me; be aſſured ſhe loves me: for "ſhe, who is a ſtranger to deceit, hath often "told me; Nelti, I will never love any one but "you."

"Oſai," demands the Prince, "is this true?" "No, never ſhould I have loved any one elſe; "but, ungrateful! he neglected the harveſt of "my father, who loved him as a child of "his own." At theſe words ſhe relented. "You love him and you forgive him," replies the Inca. "Receive his hand. And do you," ſays he to Mayobe, "reſign to him your miſ- "treſs; and to compenſate your loſs, behold!— "Is not ſhe ſufficiently beautiful?"——"Ah! "ſo beatiful," anſwers the young man, "as "to eclipſe in my eyes the charms even of Oſai "herſelf." "Well then, if you are pleaſing "to her, I preſent her to you," ſays the Prince. "Do you conſent, Elina?"—"I do," replies ſhe, "if he will not repine: for the happineſs "of the huſband is the glory of the wife. My "mother has often told me ſo, and my heart "confirms it."

Theſe, amongſt this virtuous people, were the only troubles of love.

In the midſt of the ſongs and dances, which preceded the ſacrifice, a prodigy, appearing in the air, attracted every eye. They beheld an eagle aſſailed and wounded by kites, which, alternately, pounced rapidly on him *. The eagle, exhauſted, fell beneath their bloody talons, at the foot of the Inca's throne, and in the midſt of his family. The King, as well as the people, was at firſt ſeized with aſtoniſhment and terror; but recovering that firmneſs which never entirely forſook him: "Pontiff," ſays he, "ſacrifice "on the altar of the Sun, my father, this bird, "a ſtriking image of the enemy, which threatens "us, and which will fall beneath our ſtrokes."

The Pontiff invited the Prince to enter the ſanctuary. "I follow you," ſays Huaſcar, but "ſuppreſs the fear that appears on your counte-"nance. The vulgar need no incitements to "terror."

"Obſerve," ſays the Pontiff, "before you "enter the temple, thoſe three circles upon the "pale face of the wife of the Sun." The moon was then riſing in the horizon; and the Inca

* This circumſtance is taken from Garcilaſſo.

ſaw

ſaw diſtinctly three circles on her diſk, one of the colour of blood, one black, and the other nebulous, like a ſtreak of ſmoke.

"Prince," ſays the Prieſt, "let us not diſ-"guiſe the truth of theſe omens. The circle "of blood preſages war, the black one, cala-"mity, and the third, more dreadful than both, "portends our ruin."

"Hath the Sun," aſks the Monarch, "diſ-"cloſed to you this dreadful futurity?" "I "foreſee it," ſays the Pontiff, "but the Sun "has not diſcovered it to me."——"Leave me "then," replies the Inca, "hope, the laſt "bleſſing that belongs to man, which encou-"rages and ſupports him amidſt his misfortunes. "All this may be nothing more than a ſport, "or accident of nature, and which ſhould "not be interpreted as ominous, at leaſt it can-"not now be proper to intimidate the vul-"gar."

CHAP. XXXI.

SO far was Huaſcar from betraying the anxiety which preyed upon his mind, that, to the obſervation of Alonzo, he appeared more deter-

mined than ever. Next day, the King conducted him to thoſe ſplendid * gardens, which exhibited an elaborate imitation, in gold, of every plant, flower, or fruit, that thoſe climates produced. This, which, amongſt us, would have been an unparallelled inſtance of luxury, ſerved only to ſhew the plenty and inutility of that metal.

From theſe gardens, in which art had endeavoured to copy nature, the Inca led Alonzo into thoſe, where nature herſelf diſplayed her abundance. They were ſituated in a delightful valley, on the banks of the river Apurimac, and afforded an epitome of thoſe luxuriant landſkips, which the New World contained. Clumps of majeſtic trees, uniting their ſhades, and interweaving their branches, formed, by the variety of their ſhapes and foliage, an uncommon and beautiful mixture. At a little diſtance, thickets of flowering ſhrubs attracted and delighted the eye. On the one hand were fragrant meadows diffuſing their perfumes: on the other, fruit-trees, bending under their delicious burdens, and ſoliciting the hand to gather their produce. In a word, every plant, that was valuable,

* This deſcription is taken from hiſtory.

either

either for its virtue or flavour, offered relief to the ſick, and pleaſure to the healthy.

Alonzo beheld theſe enchanting gardens with a look of melancholy mixed with compaſſion. "And will theſe delightful ſcenes," ſays he, "theſe ſacred retreats of peace and wiſdom, be "profaned by our European plunderers? and "ſhall thoſe trees, whoſe venerable umbrage "hath protected the heads of Kings, fall, be-"fore my eyes, beneath the impious axe?"

Not far from Cuſco is a lake, which the Indians highly revered: For on its borders, they aſſirmed that Manco, together with Oello, his conſort, deſcended. In the center of this lake, on a delightful iſland, the Incas had raiſed a ſuperb temple to the Sun. So great a profuſion of fertility and beauty did this ſpot comprize, that the whole ſeemed to have been the effect of inchantment. Neither the meadows of Chita, where ſported the flocks of the Sun, nor the fields of Colcampara, whoſe harveſt was ſacred, nor the valley of Youcai, called The Garden of the Empire, could vie with this iſland in charms. Here ripened the moſt delicious fruits, there grew the maize, of which the ſelect Virgins made the ſacrificial bread.

Hither Huaſcar would alſo conduct Alonzo. The young Caſtilian could not forbear admiring, at every ſtep, the wonders of culture.

He ſaw the Prieſts of the Sun, themſelves, labouring in their fields. One of them, whom age and a venerable aſpect had diſtinguiſhed from the reſt, he thus accoſted: "Inca, can it "be requiſite for you to devote yourſelves to "ſuch ſevere labour? Does not the ſacredneſs "of your office exempt you? and is it not a "profanation of it that you thus degrade your-"ſelves?"

Although Alonzo ſpoke the language of the Incas, the prieſt thought he had miſunderſtood him. Supporting himſelf on his ſpade, and beholding him with aſtoniſhment, "Young man," ſays he, "what is it you aſk? And what, in the "art of fertilizing the earth, do you find that is "degrading? Do you not know that, without "this divine art, mankind, diſperſed in woods, "would be again reduced to contend with fierce "brutes for their prey? Remember then, that it "was Agriculture, which united men in the "bands of ſociety, and raiſed for us our walls "and our temples."

"Theſe advantages," replies Alonzo, "con-"fer honour on the inventor of the art; but "the

"the exerciſe of it is not leſs humiliating and "mean, than toilſome: at leaſt, it is ſo ac- "counted in the climate where I was "born."

"In your climate," rejoins the old man, "it "ſhould be diſgraceful to live, ſince it is account- "ed ſhameful to labour for ſubſiſtence. This "labour, without doubt, is toilſome, and for this "reaſon every perſon ſhould undergo a ſhare of "it; but it is no leſs honourable than uſeful; "and among us there is nothing diſgraceful but "vice and idleneſs."

"It is, however, ſtrange," replies Alonzo, "that thoſe hands, which are conſecrated "to the altars, ſhould, the moment after they "have been offering perfumes and ſacrifices, "take up the ſpade and the pick-axe, and that "the earth ſhould be cultivated by the children "of the Sun."

"The children of the Sun," ſays the Prieſt, "imitate their father. Do you not perceive that "he is daily employed in fertilizing our fields? "You admire him for the benefits he confers, "and reproach his children, for following his ex- "ample in their labours."

The young Spaniard, though confounded, yet perſiſted in his enquiries. "Are not the people," aſked

aſked he, " obliged to cultivate thoſe fields, " which afford you proviſions?"

" The people are obliged to help us," replied the old man, " but we ought to be avaricious of " the ſweat of their brows."

" You have ſufficient," ſays Alonzo, " to " recompenſe their toil, and your ſuperfluities." ——" We never have any," returned the old man.—" What! not from ſuch immenſe riches?" —" Theſe riches have their uſe. If you have " ſeen our ſacrifices, they conſiſt of a pure " offering, the moſt inconſiderable part of which " is conſumed on the altar: the reſt is diſtri- " buted among the people. Such is the manner " in which the Sun requires his treaſures to be " employed. This is the worſhip moſt worthy " of him: and it is by this character that his " children are known. Having ſatisfied our " wants, the reſt of our poſſeſſions is no longer " our own: it then becomes the portion of the " orphan and the helpleſs. The prince is the de- " poſitary of them; and it is his province to di- " ſpenſe them: for no perſon ſhould better know " the wants of his people, than he who is their " father."

" But, in thus ſtripping yourſelves, do you " not leſſen the veneration, which the people " would

" would entertain, if they beheld you magnifi-
" cently ſpreading thoſe riches, that now paſs
" from you without oſtentation?"

The wiſe old man ſmiled at this queſtion, and took up his ſpade.

" Forgive," ſays Alonzo, " the imprudence
" of my age: I ſee that I have excited your pity;
" but I only ſought for inſtruction."

" My friend," ſays the old man, " I know
" not whether ſplendor and magnificence inſpire
" ſo much veneration, as the ſimplicity of an in-
" nocent life; but this would be a ſtill further
" reaſon for diſcarding our wealth: If we ſuppo-
" ſed ourſelves to be loved, and honoured for our
" riches, we might perhaps neglect to adorn our-
" ſelves with virtues."

Alonzo quitted the old man, impreſſed by his piety, and penetrated by his wiſdom.

He expreſſed a deſire to ſee the ſources of that gold, the profuſion of which had ſo much ſurpriſed him; and the Inca himſelf readily accompanied him to the Abitanis, the richeſt of all the mines, that have been hitherto diſcovered. A numerous people, ſpread on the ſummit of the mountain, were indolently employed in drawing forth gold from the veins of the rock. Alonzo obſerving that they ſcarce troubled themſelves

to

to penetrate the ſurface of the earth, and that they gave up the richeſt veins when it became neceſſary to dig, though ever ſo little, to purſue them, exclaimed, "Ah! with how much more "ardour would the Caſtilians urge on their "labours! Fearful and weak people, they will "make you penetrate into the entrails of the "earth, tear open its ſides, and deſcend into "its abyſſes, to hollow out a vaſt tomb for "yourſelves. Still ye will not have aſſuaged "their relentleſs avarice. Your opulent ma-"ſters, indolent and proud, will become tribu-"taries to the abilities and arts of their labo-"rious neighbours; they will pour into Europe "the treaſures of America, which will re-"ſemble pitch thrown into a burning furnace: "luſt, irritated by riches and luxury, will be "amazed to behold indigence continually re-"curring on its increaſing wants; gold, in ac-"cumulating, will ſoon ſink in value; the price "of labour increaſing, will follow the progreſs "of riches; hoarded by the avaricious they "will become leſs a bleſſing than ſcarcity itſelf, "and ye, unhappy people, and your poſterity, "will have periſhed in thoſe mines, exhauſt-"ed by your labours, without having aug-"mented the riches of Europe. Alas! per-

"haps

"haps ye will have even encreaſed its miſery "with its wants, and its misfortunes with its "crimes."

CHAP. XXXII.

ALONZO, on his return to the city of the Sun, received in theſe words, the anſwer of Ataliba: "If the King of Cuſco has forgot-"ten the will of his father, the King of Quito "has not. He wiſhes to be the friend and ally "of his brother; but will never be one of his "vaſſals."

The young ambaſſador, perceiving an immediate war to be inevitable, was ſolicitous to prepare Huaſcar for the refuſal of the Inca, his brother: "Explain to me, Inca," ſays he, "by what peculiar privilege it is, that, of all "the Kings, your father alone is placed with "his face towards the image of the Sun?"——— "It is becauſe he was his beloved ſon," replies the Inca, "that this glory is conferred upon "him."—"*His beloved ſon!* Is it not ſervility and

"and falſehood that have graced him with this "title?"—"It was given to him by the united "voice of his people, and a whole people never "flatter."———"In my opinion," ſaid Alonzo, "you ſhould aboliſh this unjuſt diſtinction, as "you well know he did not deſerve it."——— "Stranger," returned the Inca, "reſpect both "my preſence and his memory."

"Would you have me then," replies Alonzo, "reſpect a King, whom yeſterday his ſon affirm-"ed to have been fooliſh, perjured, and ſacri-"legious? Has he not crowned your brother? "Has he not violated the laws? Has he not, "with his expiring breath, kindled the flames "of civil war between the children of the Sun, "and is it his merit that entitled him to a place "in the temple of the Sun, and in the immediate "view of his image? Either you are unjuſt, or "he was: the war is either your crime, or his. "Whoſe you muſt decide: for the King of "Quito is determined to adhere to the will of "his father."

A proud and impatient ſteed is not more ſurprized at the reſtraints of a bold and ſkilful rider, when he firſt feels the curb, than was the haughty Inca at the powerful conſideration, which Alonzo oppoſed to his impetuous rage.

"Have

"Have you then received," ſaid he to the young Caſtilian, "the anſwer of this rebel?" "—I have," anſwered Alonzo; "and, Heaven "be thanked, his firmneſs renders him worthy, "both of your friendſhip and mine. I ſhould "have renounced him, if he had ſurrendered "the lawful claim of independent royalty to "become a vaſſal."

Huaſcar, full of rage re-entered his palace. Reſentment and vengeance were the firſt emotions of his heart. But, in giving way to them, he muſt diſgrace his father and outrage his memory; which, in the eſtimation of the Incas, was the higheſt impiety. Nature oppoſed the dreadful idea; and the ſoul of Huaſcar, alternately ſwayed by oppoſite ſentiments, knew not amidſt the trouble that ſurrounded him, what part to act.

During the ſtruggle of theſe contending paſſions, his favourite wife, the beautiful and modeſt Idali, found him ſo violently agitated, that ſhe trembled as ſhe approached him. In her hand ſhe led the young Xaira, her ſon, who was heir to the empire, upon whom ſhe caſt her eyes with all the tenderneſs of maternal affection and wept. The King, beholding her with a gloomy and diſtreſsful look, and obſerving her tears, extended his hand to her and inquired the cauſe

of them. "Alas!" anſwered ſhe, "I ſtill "tremble. I was with my ſon, and careſſing "the image of the huſband I adore, when "Ocello, your auguſt mother, came to me, "pale and diſordered, with trouble and terror "in her eyes." "Tender and unfortunate "Idali!" ſays ſhe, "you are delighting yourſelf "with this child, the ſole object of your hopes; "you are delighting yourſelf with the proſpect "of his future glory; but alas! how uncertain "is that futurity, while the right which calls "him to the empire is become ſo precarious! "As an odious peace hath ſubſtituted the will "of the Incas in the room of our ſacred laws, "the example, once allowed, will ſerve for a "precedent hereafter. The caprice of a man, "the artifice of a woman, the charm of novelty, "the illuſion of a moment, may be ſufficient to "blaſt all our hopes. The ſceptre of the "Incas will paſs into the hands of her who "availed herſelf of the laſt emotion of love or "weakneſs, and while the ſon of a foreign "woman reigns in Quito, and is acknowledged "to be a lawful King, nothing for the future "can be deemed ſacred." "Ah! dear child!" cried ſhe, and preſſed my ſon to her boſom, "never may thy father, though he hath ra-"tified thy grand-father's perjury, follow his "example!"

" example!" " Having ſaid this, ſhe demanded " to ſee you."

Ocello inſtantly appeared; and to the reproaches of the Inca, who was offended at her ſuggeſtions, ſhe anſwered by recriminations, which were ſtill more bitter.

Ocello having been rivalled by Zulma, and upon her account, deſerted, retained that enmity for the ſon, which ſhe had borne to the mother. The name of Ataliba was odious to her. That jealouſy, which at firſt was inſpired by love, had in vain yielded to the effects of age; even when dying, it left its poiſon in the wound: As infidelity is deſtructive to love, ſo the object of it will ever be odious. From this ſource was derived that hatred for the blood of Zulma, with which the moſt haughty of the Pallas * ſtrove to rouſe up vengeance in the ſoul of her ſon.

" Are you then reſolved," ſaid ſhe, " to " yield to the rebellious pride of the uſurper of " your rights? Are you determined to declare " to the world, that the laws of the Sun muſt " bend to the will of man! that the allotment " of a ſtate depends on the folly, error, or " caprice of a King? that an unjuſt father " may exclude his ſon from the inheritance,

* By this appellation the females of the royal blood were diſtinguiſhed.

" deſtined for him by nature, and diſpoſe of it " according to his own inclination !"

" I am far from commending," replied the Inca, " theſe dangerous maxims; and if I have " diſguiſed the injuſtice of a father, be aſſured, " I thought myſelf obliged to do it." He then particularized the reaſons which oppoſed his reſentment.

" Theſe ſpecious pretences," ſaid the mother, " are meant to hide from me the two real " reaſons of your conduct, which I have diſco- " vered, and which you dare not avow. The " one is, a hope that you, alſo, will be allowed " to ſubſtitute paſſion for the laws; and haughty " rivals are already dividing among their chil- " dren the wreck of your inheritance, and the " empire of the Sun. The other reaſon, which " reſtrains you, is indolence and effeminacy, " the trouble of taking up arms, and the dread " of being vanquiſhed: Such, at leaſt, is the " unanimous opinion of your people, who, as " witneſſes of this infamous peace, are not led " away by empty pretexts. The reigns of all " your anceſtors have been marked by glory; " yours will be diſtinguiſhed by indelible in- " famy. This empire, which they founded, " enlarged and eſtabliſhed by their courage and " firmneſs, will owe its ſpeedy declenſion and

" ruin

"ruin to your weakneſs; the blood, which, in "regular ſucceſſion, flowed through their veins, "will be diverted from its lawful courſe; and "he who affords the firſt inſtance of ſhameful "acquieſcence is my ſon! Is it thus you honour "the memory of a father? As if to debaſe their "blood were not the moſt criminal of all out-"rages againſt him, your anceſtors, and the God "himſelf, from whom you are deſcended? Was "your father poſſeſſed of virtues? Imitate them. "Was he, for a moment, ſubject to weakneſs? "Avow it, and correct what you cannot conceal, "that he was a man liable to error, and was "once miſled by the careſſes of a wife. After "ſuch an avowal, ſubject to the laws, which are "always wiſe and juſt, that blind paſſion, and "tranſient caprice, which regret diſowns, and con-"demns."

The Inca inſiſted on the evils inſeparable from civil wars. "Go, haſte," ſays ſhe, "and "conſent to this diſgraceful peace, which the "uſurper impoſes; if it be neceſſary to bend "him, lay your ſceptre at his feet." "O un-"happy child!" cries ſhe, "how do I pity thee! "and who can tell but that one day thou wilt "bluſh for thy father?" At theſe words ſhe reti-red.

The Inca, deeply wounded by theſe reproaches, went and diſpatched a meſſenger to acquaint the ambaſſador from Quito that war was declared, and that he muſt inſtantly depart. Alonzo requeſted permiſſion to ſee him again; but all his intreaties were vain; and the ſame evening he was conducted back, beyond the Abancaï.

CHAP. XXXIII.

ATALIBA was dejected at the ill ſucceſs of Alonzo's embaſſy. Having privately heard from him the particulars, he exclaimed: "Proud King, nothing then can bend thee; "thou art determined either upon my diſgrace, "or deſtruction! Heaven is more righteous than "thou, and will puniſh thy pride." At theſe words, he threw himſelf into the arms of the young Spaniard: "O my friend," cries he, "what effuſions of blood wilt thou behold! our "people ſlaughtered by each other! .... It is "his wiſh, it ſhall be accompliſhed; but puniſh-"ment will follow his crime."

"I,"

"I," ſays Alonzo, "am at your diſpoſal. "Allow me to ſhow the ſame ardour in repel- "ling the war, which animated my negocia- "tions for peace; and, whatever be the fate of "arms, ſuffer your friend to conquer or to die at "your ſide."

"No," ſaid the Prince, embracing him, "never will I involve thee in the crimes of an "impious war. Preſerve thy valour for a wor- "thy occaſion. Thou, generous and virtuous "youth, art not made to command the murder- "ers of their neareſt kin. It is enough that I "am condemned to it. Thou and ſome faithful "friends, to whom I have confided my di- "ſtreſs, alone, can tell the ſecrets of my heart. "The reſt of the world, when they ſee two "brothers armed by diſcord againſt each o- "ther, will confound the innocent with the "guilty. Leave my diſgrace to myſelf alone; "and preſerve your life to partake only of my "glory."

Orozimbo and his Mexicans, Capana and his ſavages, were eager alſo to arm themſelves for his defence. But he declined their offers in the ſame manner, and would only allow them, as he had the young Spaniard, to accompany him to the fields of Alauſi, on the confines of both kingdoms.

The

The Incâ of Quito, in the mean time, cauſed his ſtandard to be raiſed, on one of the ſummits of mount Iliniſſa; and his people were all put into motion at the ſignal.

The place of their rendezvous was in the fertile plains of Riobamba. The people who firſt came, were the inhabitants of a champaign country, included from North to South, between two long chains of mountains, and tho' beneath them, it ran out into the moſt delightful vallies, was higher than the ſummit of the Pyrénées *.

From the foot of Sangaï, whoſe burning top inceſſantly poured forth ſmoke above the clouds ——of the roaring Cotopaxi †,—of the terrible Latagunga ‡—of Chimboraço, near to which

* *Than the ſummit of the Pyrénées.*] The valley of Quito is fourteen hundred and ſixty toiſes, above the level of the ſea, higher than the Canigou and the Southern Pike, which are the higheſt mountains of the Pyrénées. (M. de la Condamine.)

† *Of the roaring Cotopaxi.*] Its eruptions were terrible in 1738, 1743, 1744, 1750 and 1753. In the laſt of theſe years the flame roſe five hundred toiſes above the ſummit of the mountain. In 1743 the noiſe of the eruption was heard at the diſtance of a hundred and twenty leagues. Fragments of rocks, from twelve to fifteen toiſes ſquare, were thrown by the volcano three leagues into the plain. (*Idem.*)

‡ *Of the terrible Latacunga.*] The trembling of this mountain, in 1738, overturned the town of its own name, with that of Hambato. The inhabitants were almoſt all buried in the ruins.

Emus,

Emus, Caucaſus and Atlas would be but hillocks *,—of Cayambur, blackened with lava, the rival of Chimboraco, all the inhabitants ruſhed to arms in defence of their King.

From the northern regions went the people of Ibara and Caranguè, who from being indigent, treacherous and ſavage, were rendered by conqueſt happy and faithful. They once ſlaughtered upon the altar of their Gods, and afterwards devoured, thoſe Incas, who had been left in their country to civilize and inſtruct them. This crime was followed by a dreadful puniſhment; and the lake, into which their mutilated bodies † were caſt, was thence named the Lake of blood ‡.

To theſe were joined the people of Otovalo, a fertile § country, interſected by a thouſand ſtreams, which, beneath the ardors of a burning ſky, diffuſed a ſalutary freſhneſs.

On the weſtern ſhores, from Acatames to the fields of Sullana, all the inhabitants of thoſe

* *Would be but hillocks.*] The height of Chimboraco is three thouſand two hundred and twenty toiſes above the level of the ſea.

† *Their mutilated bodies.*] To the number of two thouſand, according to Garcilaſſo, and twenty thouſand, according to Pedro de Cieca.

‡ *Yahuar-Cocha.*

§ *A fertile country.*] The ſoil here produced a hundred and fifty for one.

vallies,

vallies, which are watered by the Emeraud, the Saya, the Dole, and the branches of that river, whoſe torrent repels the waves in the gulph of Tumbès, came, with their quivers on their ſhoulders, and their ſpears in their hands, to follow the Inca, whitherſoever he ſhould call them; and when they were aſſembled * he thus addreſſed them:

"People, whom my father conquered not "leſs by his favours than his arms, do ye re- "member to have ſeen him, with his hoary "hair and venerable looks, ſitting in the midſt "of you, and ſaying: "Be happy; this is "the ſole return I expect from my conqueſt?—" "This good King is no more. He left two "ſons, to whom, when dying, he ſaid: "Both "reign in peace, one in the South, and the "other in the North of my empire." My bro- "ther, at that time, ſatisfied with the diviſion, "replied to his dying father: "Thy will ſhall "be a ſacred law to us." Such was his promiſe, "but he hath broken his word and now ſeeks "to ſtrip me of the inheritance I received from "my father. To your judgment I ſubmit. If "I am wrong, deſert me; if I am right, defend "me." "Thou art right," cried they, with one

* They amounted to thirty thouſand.

"voice;

"voice; and we gladly undertake thy defence."
——"Behold my ſon," replied the Inca, "who
"ought to ſucceed me in my kingdom, and to
"ſurpaſs me in wiſdom; for, like me, he hath
"the example of the Kings our anceſtors, and
"with theirs he will alſo have mine."———May
"he live," anſwered they; "and when thou
"ſhalt be no more, may his conduct remind us
"of his father!"———"Come on," continues
"the Inca, "defend my rights and his. My
"brother, more powerful than I, diſdains me,
"and, at his leiſure, is preparing for war, the
"report of which, no doubt, he flatters him-
"ſelf, will ſtrike me with fear; it is my wiſh
"to prevent him before his forces are collected.
"To-morrow, let us march for Cuſco."

The next day, he advanced by the fields of Alauſi, towards the walls of Cannara, a city ſtill famous for its magnifience and the gold with which it abounds. The Incas, by adorning it with walls, a palace, and temples, had provided themſelves a fortreſs to keep the Chancas in awe.

This populous, warlike, and powerful nation, was compoſed of various tribes. Some of whom were the people of Curampa, Quiuvala, and Tacmar, who, being proud of their imaginary deſcent from a lion, the object of worſhip amongſt

amongſt their fathers, ſtill inveſted themſelves in the ſkin of their God; and while they wore his mane on their foreheads, they carried in their eyes his fire. Others of them were the people of Sulla, Vilca, Hanco and Urimarca; the firſt of theſe boaſted that they were ſprung from a mountain, and the reſt, from a cavern, a lake, and a river, to which their fathers were accuſtomed to ſacrifice their firſt-born. Tho' this horrible worſhip had been aboliſhed, they could not be undeceived with reſpect to their origin; and this error ſupported their martial diſpoſition.

The Chancas, ſurpriſed by Ataliba in a defenceleſs condition, demanded of him why he entered their country, in arms? "I am going," replied the Inca, "to ſolicit the alliance of "the King of Cuſco, and to ſwear to him, if "he will grant it, an inviolable friendſhip on "the tomb of our father."

Tho' nothing could leſs reſemble a ſuppliant King than this Prince, at the head of a powerful army, yet they affected to believe him; and he, deceived by appearances, was preparing to continue his rout, till a Cacique of the country entered his tent. This Cacique, who had been hurt by the pride of the Inca of Cuſco, having ſaluted Ataliba, thus addreſſed him. "You think

"think to paſs in ſafety thro' the country of "this people, becauſe you have forbidden your "army to injure or oppreſs them; but know, "that in a council, at which I was preſent, a "conſpiracy hath been formed againſt you. I "love you, becauſe they aſſure me you are affable "and good; but I hate your rival, becauſe he "is auſtere and proud. He hath ſlighted me. "I am the ſon of the Lion, and will not brook "an affront."

Ataliba thanked the Cacique, and conſulted his Lieutenants on the information he had received. Theſe were Palmore and Corambé, who had both been bred to arms, under the ſtandards of the King his father, and were revered by the troops they had commanded in the conqueſt of Quito. "Prince," ſaid one of them to him, "behold thoſe heaps of bones, "overgrown with graſs, that riſe on yonder "plain; theſe are the honourable remains of "twenty thouſand Chancas who, in defence of "their liberty, fell in battle *. Their chil-"dren are not deſtitute of courage. Should we

* *Fell in battle.*] In the reign of the Inca Roca: there remained on the ſpot thirty thouſand men, eight thouſand of whom belonged to the Inca. The plain Saſcahuana, where this battle was fought, received from thence the name of *Yahuarpampa, the field of blood.* See Chap. 30.

" conquer, as I expect, they will ceaſe to be " dangerous, but, as the event of war is un- " certain, it would be madneſs not to provide " for the worſt. Tho' I have expreſſed my " hopes of victory, yet it muſt not be diſſem- " bled that we may be overcome; and if this " ſhould be our fate, theſe people, emboldened " by ſucceſs, will purſue their advantage to our " deſtruction. Neglect not then the advice of " this Cacique. The fortreſs of Cannara will " ſerve to ſupport or defend us, and, ſhould we " be defeated, will enable us to rally. As the " ſafety of the army depends on this poſt, it " cannot be too carefully guarded; if I may " venture to give an opinion, Inca, you your- " ſelf ſhould undertake the charge."

The Inca, ſeeing nothing more in this prudent advice than the intention of leaving him in a place of ſafety, was offended, and ſaid to Corambé, " If my preſence excite your ſuſpicions, you " know not my heart. Your age, your exploits, " the eſteem of my father, have entitled you to " my confidence, and I never gave it by halves. " You ſhall command; I will be your firſt ſol- " dier, and the reſt ſhall learn from me to obey " you with ardor. If we be victorious, fear " not that your King will rob you of your ho- " nour. It is no longer a time to be anxious

" for

" for my life. My rights are the object of our " defence, and it would be ſhameful that I ſhould " be abſent while you are engaged. Speak no " more then of placing me at a diſtance from " danger."

" No, Prince," replies Corambé, " I ſhould " be unjuſt to your merit, if I ſuſpected your " courage, but you think I am jealous and en- " vious of your glory. You will reproach your- " ſelf hereafter with having injured the zeal of a " friend, whom your father better knew."

" Ah! generous old man," ſays the Inca, embracing him, " forgive me. I have been, for a " moment, unjuſt. But why would you leave " me inactive beneath the ſhade of theſe walls?"

" It ſhall be my poſt," replied Corambé: " Leave " me but three thouſand men, thoſe valiant Ca- " ciques, and this ſtranger, who, like them, is " impatient to ſerve you." The Inca no longer refuſed. Alonzo, Capana, the brave Orozimbo, the Savages and the Mexicans embraced the propoſal with joy, reſolving to ſhed their blood in the Inca's defence. Having left with them this number of choſen men in the fortreſs of Cannara, he marched with his army towards the fields of Tumibamba.

CHAP. XXXIV.

THE King of Cuſco, in the mean time, was active in aſſembling his forces; while the various tribes around him, quitting their fields at his ſummons, ran to arms, and reſorted to his ſtandard.

From the banks of that celebrated * lake, where Manco deſcended, came the people of Aſſilo, Avancani, Uma, Urco, Cayavir, Mullama, Aſſan, Cancola and Hillavi, who were all united under the name of Collas. Theſe left their fertile paſtures, where they formerly worſhipped a white ram, as the God of their flocks, and the ſource of their riches. They ſuppoſed themſelves to have ariſen from this lake, which their cottages ſurrounded; and that, after death, they ſhould deſcend into it, as into another Lethe, to aſſume new bodies, and reviſit the light.

Next to them advanced the haughty and brave nation of the Charcas, who were ſubjected, not by

* The lake of Cellao.

arms,

arms, but by reaſon. When the Incas informed them that they were come to give them laws, their young warriors earneſtly demanded to be led forth either to conquer, or to die in defence of their freedom. But when the old men extolled the great wiſdom and goodneſs of the Incas, they dropped their arms, and ran in crowds to proſtrate themſelves before the ſon of the Sun, who was deſirous of becoming their King.

The warlike Chayantans were ſtill more wiſe. Their voluntary ſubmiſſion to the power of the Incas is an unexampled inſtance of wiſdom. The Prince, who went to ſubdue them, having informed them by his deputies that he was come to offer them laws, morals, order, religion, and a more rational and happy life than they had hitherto known, the Chayantans anſwered: "If "this be true, your King hath no need of an "army to reduce us. Let him leave his forces "on our frontiers; let him come himſelf and "convince us; we will ſubmit ourſelves to him: "It is proper that the wiſeſt ſhould command. "But let him alſo promiſe to leave us in peace, "if, after having heard him, a change of religion "and manners ſhould not appear to us ſo advan-"tageous as he repreſents." On theſe equitable conditions the Inca came, with but few attend-

ants, and addreſſed them. After having liſtened to him with attention, and perceived the benefits they ſhould enjoy from the laws of the Incas, they ſubmitted themſelves to him, and rendered him thanks. Such were theſe ſavages, whom the Europeans have thought it not poſſible to civilize but by murder and ſlavery.

A leſs numerous people advanced from the Eaſt, who cultivated the foot of the inacceſſible mountains of the Andes. Their anceſtors worſhipped thoſe enormous ſnakes *, with which their country abounded; and alſo the tyger, on account of his ferocity. Tho' they had abjured the worſhip of the latter, yet they continued to wear his ſkin, and their hearts had not loſt his ſavage diſpoſition. Among the Andes, from whence they deſcended, a mother, before ſhe preſented the breaſt to her ſuckling, ſmeared it with human blood, that their infants, by receiving blood with their milk, might be taught to thirſt after it the more.

From the North, reſorted to the banks of Apurimac, the people of Tumibamba, Caſſamarca, Zamora, and that irritable nation, whoſe walls have preſerved the name of the Contour †, whom

* *Thoſe enormous ſnakes.*] They are even twenty-five, and thirty feet long.

† Cuntur-Marca.

their

their fathers revered as a God. A plume taken from this terrible bird * diſtinguiſhed the children of his votaries, and proudly waved on their brows.

Next to them, came a choſen body from the people of Sura, a country abounding in gold; from Racuna, where beauty ſeemed to be the gift of the climate, ſo generally was it poſſeſſed; and from the fields of Pumalacta, formerly the haunt of lions, to whom the inhabitants paid their adoration.

From the plains of the Weſt aſſembled in crouds the brave people of Imara, Collapampa, and Queva, by whom the empire was ſaved when the Chancas † revolted, and who ſtill wore, as marks of their glory, the ſame ornaments that diſtinguiſhed the offspring of the Sun ‡.

Laſt came the inhabitants of the rich valleys of Yca, Piſco, Acari, Naſca, and Rimac, all of whom were eaſily conquered; and thoſe of

* *This terrible bird.*] It is black and white, like a magpye. Nature has not furniſhed this bird with talons; its beak, however, is ſo hard and ſtrong as, with a ſingle ſtroke, to penetrate the hide of a bull. Its wings, when expanded are above twenty feet wide. Two of theſe birds are ſufficient to kill a bull, and devour him.

† Under the Inca Rooa. *See* Chap. 30. and 34.

‡ *The ſame that diſtinguiſhed the offspring of the Sun.*] Their hair was cut, their ears pierced, and they wore the fringe called *Lautu* on their foreheads.

Huaman,

Huaman, who, though more obſtinate, were in their turn ſubdued. When the worſhip and laws of the Incas were propoſed for their acceptance, they anſwered, That the Sea, a beneficent and liberal Divinity, was the object of their worſhip; that they forbade not the people of the mountains to adore the Sun, whoſe influences were grateful to them, and who tempered the ſeverity of their cold climates; but as for themſelves, whom he conſumed, and whoſe fields he deſtroyed, they never would make him their God; that they were contented with their King, and the deity they worſhipped, and were determined to defend both, at the price of their blood. The war was long terrible, but the enemy, to reduce them, having diverted the ſtreams which ſupplied their parched furrows, neceſſity compelled them to yield; and the mild equity of the reign of the Incas, authorized the violence to which they recurred.

Scarcely had theſe nations reached the walls of Cuſco, when intelligence came, that the King of Quito was arrived at Tumibamba. Huaſcar, on receiving this advice, prepared to intercept him, at the ford of the river that croſſes thoſe fields. But a fortunate incident gained him an advantage, which could not have been obtained from his prudence or counſels.

Ataliba

Ataliba had paſſed the river; and intended to incamp on an oppoſite hill. The day was declining, and the army of Quito having had a long march, the ſoldiers were overcome by fatigue, and ſtood in need of repoſe. But, zeal for their cauſe inſpiring them with vigour, they aſcended the eminence in ſafety. No ſooner, however, had they gained the ſummit, than a column of the King of Cuſco's army was there ready to receive them, and the ſignal to engage was inſtantly given. The advantage of ground, and numbers, over troops already worn out with fatigue, rendered every effort of valour abortive. The army of Quito, though it rallied twenty times, was as often overpowered; and were it not for the approaching night, which favoured their retreat, muſt have been entirely deſtroyed. It was neceſſary to repaſs the river, and the King, who defended the ford, in perſon, fell into the enemies hands.

Huaſcar would not condeſcend to ſee him. "He ſhall undergo," ſaid he, "the fate of a re-"bel. Let him be carefully guarded in the fort "of Tumibamba."

This diſaſter ſpread dejection thro' the army of the captive King. The whole camp was in confuſion. The ſon of Ataliba ran every where diſtracted, ſtretching forth his hands, and crying

crying to the people, "My friends! reſtore to "me my father." His grief and diſorder redoubled the diſtreſs with which they were every one filled.

Palmore, afflicted, but tranquil, goes to Zoraï, and bringing him into his tent, ſaid to him: "Prince, be calm. We ſhould never deſpair. "Your people are faithful. He ſhall be reſto- "red."—"You flatter me," ſaid the young man, trembling both with fear and with joy.—"I do "not flatter: he ſhall be reſtored to you. Go, "and ſhew to your people an example of forti- "tude."

The night paſſed on; and a mournful ſilence, the effect of conſternation, brooded over the whole army. Palmore alone, ſhut up in his tent, ſleepleſs and ruminating, ſaid to himſelf: "What ſhall I do? If by force I ſhould "attempt to reſcue my King, I well know his "enemy: he will ſooner deſtroy, than ſurren- "der him. And ſhould any indications of irre- "ſolution, weakneſs, or fear eſcape me, the "whole army will be dejected, and all muſt be "loſt."

While he was abſorbed in theſe gloomy reflections, an old ſoldier entered his tent. "Do "you remember me," aſked he? "I fought un- "der your ſtandards in the conqueſt of Quito. "You

"You may ſtill ſee my ſcars. When the Ca-
"cique of Tacmar was conquered, taken and im-
"priſoned in the fort of Tumibamba, I was one
"of his guards. An attempt was made to reſcue
"him, through a long cavern, which reached to
"the priſon. The enterprize, however, was diſ-
"covered, and Tacmar being brought to ſub-
"mit, the Cacique obtained his freedom. Peace
"ſoon effaced the remembrance of war, and this
"avenue, which was dug to the fort, hath never
"been filled up: I know the entrance of it,
"though it be now overgrown, and if the pri-
"ſon of the Inca be, as I think, the ſame with
"that of the Cacique, I wiſh only for ten men
"of experienced courage, to ſet him, this night,
"free."

Palmore, applauding his zeal, bid him chooſe ten companions worthy of himſelf, and ſaw them go from the camp in the profoundeſt ſilence. He ſpent the reſt of the night in the moſt diſtreſsful alarms. Fear, hope, uncertainty, probability, and the danger of the event, alternately agitated his breaſt. On the one hand, was the liberty, and on the other, the life, of his King. The important deciſion hung upon a moment.

In this interval the King of Quito was groaning under the weight of his chains, more tormented

tormented by the thought of his people and his ſon, than by any regard for himſelf.

At once, in the midſt of the reflexions into which he was ſunk, a ſound, iſſuing from beneath him, called off his attention. He liſtened; and the noiſe ſeemed to approach him. The ground trembled under his feet. He retired; and ſaw the earth looſening. In a moment it was thrown up as from a grave, when a man, riſing, without ſpeaking, gave him a ſignal to be ſilent, and, ſeizing him by the hand, drew him into the cavern, which had opened before him.

Ataliba, without reſiſtance, gave himſelf up to his guide, and, on coming out of the cavern, ſaw himſelf ſurrounded by ſoldiers, who ſaid to him: "Come, Prince, you are free. Come, "your people wiſh for you. Reſtore them to "life and hope.—I am free! and by your means! "O my deliverers!" ſaid he to them, "what "do I not owe you! Shall I be ever able to re- "ward your deſert? But, to give this enterprize "its proper effect, their minds muſt be caught "by the appearance of a prodigy. Let them "not know that you have delivered me." They promiſed him to keep it a ſecret, and, by favour of the night, Ataliba croſſed the river, arrived at his camp, and reached, undiſcovered, the tent of Palmore.

The

The old man, worn out without anxiety, on ſeeing his maſter, fell at his knees. The Inca raiſed, and embraced him. "Soldiers," ſays Palmore, "let one of you, without noiſe, run "to the Prince and acquaint him with his fa- "ther's return."

This affectionate and beloved ſon inſtantly arrived, diſtracted with joy and ſurprize. The mutual tranſports of the young Inca and his father were interrupted by the ſhouts of the army, who, as ſoon as they awoke, preſſed round in crowds, demanding a ſight of their King. He appeared, and their ſhouts were increaſed: "There he is: "it is he: 'tis himſelf. He is free, and reſtored "to us again."

"Yes, my people, ſaid Ataliba, "the Sun "my father hath eluded the vigilance of my ene- "mies. He hath cauſed me to eſcape from the "walls that confined me. I owe my deliverance "to his paternal regard."

To this recital the multitude (ever fond of exaggerating the object of its wonder) added, that Ataliba had eſcaped from his priſon in the form of a ſnake *. This report, communicated from one to another, was ſoon confirmed, and received as a ſignal indication of the favour of Heaven.

* This circumſtance is taken from the hiſtory.

"Palmore," ſaid the King, "now is the mo-
"ment to ſurpriſe my enemies, and repair my
"diſgrace."

"No, Prince, no," anſwered Palmore, "you
"ſhall expoſe yourſelf no more. You have
"cauſed us, this night, but too much anxiety.
"Do you repair to thoſe who are defending
"Cannara, and ſend Corambé to me." The King yielded to the importunities of his General, and ordered his ſon to be called.

Prince," ſaid he, "I leave you under the
"conduct of my friends, and the guard of my
"people. Remember your anceſtors. They
"entered the field with a wiſe intrepidity. Imi-
"tate their prudence, or rather conſult the
"chiefs, who command you. A wiſe compli-
"ance with the advice of thoſe whom years have
"ſtored with experience, is the prudence that
"belongs to your age." "My friends," ſays he, to Palmore and the warriors that ſurrounded him, "I commit him to your care, and into
"your hands I delegate my rights as a father.
"Adieu, my ſon! Return worthy of all my
"affection." At theſe words, the King, preſſing to his boſom the young man, who poſſeſſed every attraction of beauty that could render virtue more amiable in ingenuous youth, dropped a tear; and fixing, upon Palmore and the Caciques,

çiques, a look, that expreſſed every emotion of paternal love, again committed his ſon to their care, and turned from them his eyes.

CHAP. XXXV.

WHILST Ataliba, on his return to Cannara, was croſſing the fields of Loxa, information, that the Cannarins had revolted, was brought him. All the people, in one body, ſurrounded the citadel, and threatened to cut off the communication between it and all water. The extremity was urgent. There was no way of compelling this warlike people to raiſe the ſiege, but by leaving the walls, and attacking them at the hazard of being hemmed in, and overpowered by numbers.

At this juncture the moſt aſtoniſhing phenomenon in nature appeared. The object of devotion in thoſe climates, at once, and in the midſt of a cloudleſs ſky, grew dark. A deep, and inſtant gloom overcaſt the earth. The ſhade no longer ſpread itſelf from the Eaſt, but fell from the ſummit of the heavens, and veiled the whole

horizon. The atmoſphere became cold and damp. The animals, ſuddenly deprived of the heat that enlivened, and the light that guided them, motionleſs and ſad, ſeemed to aſk the cauſe of this unexpected night. Their inſtinct, which counted the hours, told them that it was not yet the hour of repoſe. In the woods, they called to each other in faultering voices, aſtoniſhed at not being able to ſee one another; in the vallies they aſſemble, and crowd together in fear. The birds, which, on the faith of day, had aſcended aloft in air, ſurprized by the darkneſs, knew not whither to fly. The turtle threw itſelf into the way of the vulture, and he was alarmed at the meeting. Every thing poſſeſſed of life was ſeized with affright. Even the vegetables were not inſenſible of this general criſis. It might be ſaid that the immenſe current of life, which flowed thro' an infinitude of veins, was ceaſing to circulate, and that the ſoul of the world appeared to be expiring.

And man! .... alas! in him reflection, to the terrors of inſtinct, adds the trouble and perplexities of a helpleſs foreſight. Blind and inquiſitive, whatever is inexplicable he converts into phantoms, and, preferring fear to ignorance, torments his imagination with diſtreſsful forebodings. Happy, at ſuch a ſeaſon, are the people

people to whom the wiſe have diſcloſed the ſecrets of nature! They behold the Sun, darkened at noon, without fear; and wait without alarm for the inſtant, when the earth ſhall again emerge into light. But what words can expreſs the terror and amazement, that poſſeſs at ſuch a time, the worſhippers of the Sun! In a ſky perfectly ſerene, when their God, in all his ſplendor, hath attained the zenith of his glory, he, at once, diſappears! while both the cauſe and duration of the prodigy are equally unknown. The cities of Quito, of the Sun and of Cuſco, with the camps of both Incas, were filled with lamentations and dread.

At Cannara, a ſudden horror prevailed. The beſieged, and their aſſailants, lay proſtrate on the earth. Alonzo, in the midſt of theſe diſtracted Indians, obſerved, with a mixed emotion of ſurpriſe and compaſſion, the prevalence of ignorance and fear on the human heart. He beheld the moſt intrepid warriors turn pale, and tremble. "Friends," ſays he, "hear me. "Time is preſſing on. It is of importance for "you to be now undeceived. This appearance "in the heaven is no evil portent. Nothing is "more natural, and when I have explained it, "you will no longer be afraid." The Indians, whom this language began to encourage, li-

ſtened with attention, and Alonzo proceeded. "When, in the ſhade of a mountain, you no long-"er ſee the Sun, you ſay, without fear, he is "hidden by the mountain; it is myſelf, and not "he, that is in the ſhade. He remains in the "heaven the ſame. Well then, inſtead of a "mountain, it is a large and ſolid globe, a world "like the earth which is now paſſing under his "diſk. But this world, which is purſuing its "courſe, will ſhortly paſs on, and the Sun re-ap-"pear more radiant than before. Be no longer "afraid of a tranſient ſhadow, but avail your-"ſelves of the terror that poſſeſſes your ene-"mies."

Error, amongſt the people of the new world, is not deeply planted. So ſlight a hold has it gained in the heart, that the firſt breath of truth tears it up by the roots. As they adopt opinions without examination, ſo they diſcard them without regret. Alonzo, by means of a ſingle image, which was obvious and ſenſible, undeceived their underſtandings, and encouraged their hearts. In fact, the Sun, like a circle of gold, ſurrounding the ſhade, began to recover his light. "What then!" cried they, "is this "no defect in our God, nor a mark of his an-"ger?" and Corambé, intirely to diſpel their apprehenſions, ſaid to them: "Soldiers,

"what

"what this man hath foretold I have known to "happen. He is wiſer than we. Haſte then, "take arms, ſally forth and drive theſe, whom "fear hath already ſubdued."

At the ſhouts of the beſieged, who on the firſt appearance of returning light, burſt forth from the walls of the fort, the Cannarins, abandoned themſelves to the impulſe of terror. They were attacked in their camp, and inſtantly routed. The Sun, reſtoring light again to his fields, beheld them diſperſed, dying and dead.

Alonzo, in this ſally, had never quitted Capana; and at the head of his ſavages, they were purſuing the line they had broken, when at a diſtance they ſaw another party engaged. "See there," ſays Alonzo, "a troop, as I think, of our friends, "on whom the Cannarins are taking their re-"venge. Let us fly to their aid." They ſcoured acroſs the plain with the fury of a tempeſt; and a whirlwind of duſt marked the path they had taken. They came up. It was the king, the Inca himſelf, whom his valiant guard had ſurrounded, and was defending, againſt a ſuperior force of the enemy.

Ataliba was diſtinguiſhed by Alonzo, from the cincture of his head, the ſplendor of his ſhield, and his courage, which rendered him more conſpicuous

conſpicuous than both. The lightning burſts thro' the clouds with leſs violence, than the ſword of the Caſtilian opened him a paſſage thro' the numerous aſſailants of Ataliba. The king, at the ſight of Alonzo, was animated with the hope of ſucceſs. Nor was he diſappointed. Exerting their united efforts they charged, repulſed and overturned every opponent.

When the Cannarins had given way and fled before them, Ataliba throwing himſelf into the arms of Alonzo: "How happy am I," ſays he, "O my friend, to owe my deliverance to you! "As I am wounded, I leave you to rally my "men. Spare all you meet with unarmed." Having thus ſaid, he ordered them to bear him to the fort.

His wound, tho' painful, was not dangerous. The gum of the mulli, a valuable balm (which nature, as if to expiate the crime of beſtowing upon them gold, had given to the inhabitants of theſe climates) being applied to the wound, effected an immediate cure, and reſtored this unfortunate Prince to life, and to ſorrow.

The news of the Inca's victory was carried by Corambé to the camp. Palmore, however, was willing to wait till it might reach that of the enemy, and ſpread through it an alarm. He then went to the king of Cuſco, and thus addreſſed

addreſſed him: "The Inca, your brother, was "deſirous of peace, and you have declared war. "Before hoſtilities were commenced, he came, "and repeated his deſire. An unexpected in- "cident, which hath given you the advantage, "ought not to make you vain of your ſucceſs. "We wiſh for peace, from the love of peace "alone, and the juſt horror with which we be- "hold a civil war. Inca, weigh well your "anſwer. Our javelins are no longer in our "hands; our bows are unſtrung; and the arrow "of death ſleeps in its quiver; think before it be "drawn; what diſtreſs one word of your lips "may prevent, or occaſion. It is in circum- "ſtances like theſe that language can murder, "and the tongue of a King become a dart with "a thouſand barbs. You will anſwer to the "Sun your father for the blood of his ſubjects "and his children. Equality, independence, "but with concord and union, I am commiſſion- "ed by the King your brother both to offer, and "demand."

The Monarch anſwered, that the Incas, his anceſtors, had never been preſcribed to Palmore, with a deep ſigh, replied: "Since it is your "will! ... to-morrow."———And returned to the camp.

At

At the break of day, both armies were drawn out on the plain, and it was the firſt time in eleven reigns that the ſtandard of Manco had been borne on oppoſite ſides. As it was the pledge of victory, the centre, in which it was placed, became the chief object both of attack and defence.

At a diſtance from the poſt of danger, and on an eminence towards Cuſco, the throne of Huaſcar, canopied with feathers of a thouſand hues, and borne by twenty Caciques, reflected the rays of the morning. The Inca, from this elevation, on a height that commanded the plain, ſeemed to preſide over the deſtiny of the impending conteſt.

The two armies approached each other with equal pace; and at once the war-cry of theſe people, the terrible word, Illapa *, repeated by a hundred thouſand voices, made the woods and the mountains reſound. To this reverberated cry was joined the ſound of arrows thirſting for blood.

But their quivers were ſoon empty, and the arrow from that moment, gave place to the javelin, which, thrown from leſs diſtance, failed not to wound. Battalions that could ſcarcely

* See the laſt note of the *ſecond* chapter.

maintain

maintain their ground, might now be ſeen cloſing their ranks to fill up their vacancies, and conceal their loſs. Pain extinguiſhed their ſhouts, and death preſerved an indignant ſilence: the Indian, leſt his enemy ſhould have the joy to hear him complain, retained, to his laſt ſigh, the voice of his anguiſh.

To the javelin ſucceeded the hatchet and the club. Theſe weapons appeared terrible amongſt people, to whom iron and nitre, the gifts of the furies, were entirely unknown. Equal bravery hitherto held the battle in ſuſpenſe. Victory, hovering over the field in doubt, between either army, dipped her wings in the blood of both.

The ſuperiority of a people inured to war, over thoſe who have long lived in peace, was, on this occaſion, very apparent. The braveſt part of the army of Cuſco was ſtationed to defend the hill. The reſt, conſiſting of ſhepherds, whom indolence rendered effeminate, had greatly the advantage in numbers, which, however, were but of little avail, when contraſted with the courage of thoſe that oppoſed them. Freſh battalions ſupplied the places of ſuch as, broken and routed, turned their backs on the enemy; but theſe all gave way in ſucceſſion.

The enemy, continually advancing, threatened to ſurround the body that defended the ſtandard.

The

The King of Cuſco, perceiving from a diſtance his centre overpowered, detached from the hill to their ſupport thoſe choſen warriors, to whom had been committed the care of his perſon. This, being foreſeen by Corambé, while the party detached were haſtening to their poſt, he, with ſome choſen companies in reſerve, charged the weakened guard that ſurrounded the throne, cut, through them, a way to the Inca himſelf, took him alive, bound him in fetters, and conducted him out of the field.

This diſaſter was inſtantly proclaimed by a thouſand exclamations of grief. The report ſpread through the army, and carried with it deſpair. Terror and diſperſion ſucceed. The people, diſtracted at their loſs, threw away their arms, and ſought to eſcape: grief, perplexity, and dread, prevented their flight; they fell, diſperſed on the plain, having nothing to hope from, but the mercy of their conquerors; yet this they vainly implored. No pity was ſhewn them: the forces of Ataliba were tranſported with rage. The two old men, who commanded them, gave orders to deſiſt, and ſtop the effuſion of blood, but their orders were iſſued in vain; the carnage was prolonged, without abating their fury. Never, they thought, could they be ſufficiently revenged for the loſs, which had rendered them furious

furious and cruel. The prince, the ſon of their King, Zorai was no more. O unhappy father! how wilt thou lament thy conqueſt!

When the ſtandard was attacked, Zorai advanced at the head of his men and animated them by his own example. Emotions were excited in every heart by his youth, beauty, and courage. The enemy, ſeeing him expoſe himſelf to their ſtrokes, admired and pitied him; forgetting to fear him, they dared not to ſtrike him. One only, a ſavage inhabitant of the Andes, at the moment, when the young Prince, in the ardor of the conteſt, ſeized the ſtandard, aimed at him a fatal arrow. The flint, with which it was barbed, penetrated his breaſt. He tottered, and his Indians preſſed around to ſupport him, but alas! in vain. His eyes loſt their fire, and the flowers of beauty faded on his cheek, a mortal chillneſs began to ſpread thro' all his limbs. As a young cedar on the edge of a foreſt, torn from its roots by a ſtorm, inclines on the ſurrounding trees, which hold it up from falling, and appears to be ſtill alive, though its drooping branches and withering leaves diſcover that the earth, which nouriſhed it, ſupports it no longer; ſo appeared the young Inca, mortally wounded and leaning on his ſoldiers. "O my "father!" cries he with a faultering voice,

"how great will be thy grief! Tell him my "friends, that my blood hath at leaſt gained him "the victory. Wrap me in the ſtandard which "hath coſt me my life, to conceal, from the eyes "of my father, too painful a ſight, and conſole "him with the thought, that I died worthy of "him."

The united exclamations of grief and revenge reſounded around him. "No," ſays he, "it "is enough to have conquered; I wiſh not for "vengeance. I am an Inca, and I forgive." They bore him from the field of battle, where fury renewed the onſet. Some moments after, lifting his eye-lids towards Quito, he once pronounced the name of father, and the endearing title hung, half-uttered, on his parting breath. At the inſtant he expired, the diſtreſsful cries of the guard informed the army of Cuſco that their King was taken.

Terror on the one ſide, and fury on the other, preſented nothing but confuſion and ſlaughter in the fields of Tumibamba. Cuſco was taken and ſacked; the eldeſt of the King's brothers, the brave and wiſe Mango, who defended it, finding that he muſt either periſh or give it up, retreated, fighting, and eſcaped to the mountains. The haughty Ocello, the lovely and tender Idali, with

with the beloved child *, whoſe birth had deſtined him to ſucceed in the empire, had ſcarcely time to flee; and the generals of Ataliba, having employed every effort to terminate the ravage, at length collected their forces on the banks of the Apurimac.

* Xaïra.

CHAP. XXXVI.

HERE it was that the impetuous Huaſcar, under an inexorable guard, abandoned himſelf to every impulſe of his wayward paſſions. Palmore and Corambé, on entering his tent, proſtrated themſelves, as was uſual, before him, and addreſſed him in the moſt reſpectful and ſoothing expreſſions. He ſcarcely raiſed his head; and beholding them with a look of indignation: "Traitors," ſaid he, "either break my fetters, "or imbrue your hands in my blood. It is to "aggravate my misfortune that ye thus mingle "reſpect with inſult. If I am a King, give me "back my freedom; you may then bend before "me. But, if I am a ſlave, why not trample up-"on me?"

He had ſcarcely finiſhed, when his ear was filled with the loudeſt exclamations of grief. "You are not the only perſon that is unhappy," ſaid Palmore. "Ataliba hath loſt his ſon."— "Ah!" cried Huaſcar, while his eyes ſhone with inhuman joy, "I ſhall then behold his tears. "May Heaven requite him with all the evils he "hath brought on me!"

The people of Quito, being re-aſſembled in their camp, demanded to ſee the body of the Prince, which had been concealed from their view, and the cries, that had juſt been heard, were their expreſſions of ſorrow and rage at the ſight. As ſoon as they were ſoothed, and had retired, they were prevailed upon to repaſs the river; and the return of this victorious army from conqueſt, reſembled the funeral pomp of a young man, whom his family, of which he had been the only hope, were attending to his grave. Conſternation, mourning, and ſilence, ſurrounded the bier on which the Prince, wrapped up in the ſtandard, a melancholy, but glorious evidence of his valour, lay extended. Cloſe behind, followed the King of Cuſco, borne on a ſeat of equal height, enjoying in his ſoul the public diſtreſs.

The two Generals of Ataliba accompanied the funeral bed, with penſive looks and dejected foreheads,

foreheads, forgetful that they had conquered an empire, and attentive only to what this unfortunate father would ſuffer.

"Alas!" ſays Palmore, "he confided him to "our care; from us he again expects him; his "paternal arms will be open to embrace him; "and we have nothing to reſtore to them, but a "breathleſs corpſe! How ſhall we appear before "him?"

"He is a man," ſaid Corambé: "his ſon "was mortal: I feel for his loſs; but, inſtead "of flattering his weakneſs, I would inſpire "him with fortitude to withſtand his mis-"fortune. Let me precede the army, and, be-"fore the report arrive, prepare him to receive "it."

Ataliba, recovered of his wound, but ſtill feeble and languiſhing, was mortified to find that the defeat of the Chancas had but two well revenged him. He ſighed over his victory, and was ruminating in uneaſineſs on the dangers to which his people, his friends, and his ſon were expoſed, when he received information that Corambé was arrived. Surpriſed, and impatient to know the cauſe of his return, he ordered him to be immediately introduced. Corambé appeared before him. "Inca," ſaid he, "the conteſt is ended. "The empire is your's, without a diviſion:

" your enemies are all either deſtroyed or diſarm-
" ed. Huaſcar, the only one remaining, is a pri-
" ſoner, and on his way to you."

Scarcely had he ſpoken, when Ataliba, in a tranſport of joy, aroſe, embraced him, and ſaid: " Invincible warrior, I expected every thing " from thee and thy colleague; but this pro-" digy exceeds my expectations, and was beyond " the reach of my moſt ſanguine wiſhes. Pro-" ceed, and complete the felicity of thy King. " He is a father; and the anxiety of a father " ever fills his heart. Where is my ſon? " Where haſt thou left him? Why did he not " accompany thee?"——" Your ſon . . . . he " hath been in perils that might have daunted the " braveſt."—" And, I doubt not, defied them? " Tell me. This ſilence is dreadful."—" What " ſhall I anſwer? Alas! he never beheld the " horrors of battle before. Nature hath feel-" ings, which virtue cannot conquer."—" Hea-" vens! what do I hear? He fled then! he is " covered with ignominy! he hath diſgraced his " father!" " Would it have been better that he " ſhould expoſe himſelf to inevitable death, and " have fallen?"—" Heaven grant he had!"—— " Well then, be comforted. He hath obtained " the height of glory, and fell worthy of you."— " He is dead then!"—" Your army, in tears, are

" bring-

" bringing him hither: He was at once the ob-
" ject of their affection and example. Never was
" ſuch valour diſplayed at ſo early an age."

The heart of Ataliba was pierced by this terrible ſtroke, and, in ſeeking conſolation, he increaſed his diſtreſs. He ſunk, overcome with affliction, and a torrent of tears guſhed forth from his eyes. " Ah! Corambé, by how cruel an
" experiment," ſaid he, " have you prepared me
" to ſuſtain my misfortune! You ſlandered my
" ſon! and I believed the calumny! Dear child!
" forgive it: my tears ſhall never ceaſe to ex-
" piate my error. The glory of thy death in-
" hances my injuſtice. Diſaſterous day! fatal
" battle! thus doth Heaven avenge an impious
" war: the vanquiſhed and the victors are con-
" founded in puniſhment; and its wrath admits
" no diſtinction."

It was now become neceſſary for this afflicted father to aſſume the care of his new empire. This rich and extenſive conqueſt, which had coſt the joint labours of eleven reigns, and which, in a ſingle day, was become his: Cuſco, now obedient to his laws; his rival a captive, and ſubject to his power; nothing could alleviate his diſtreſs. He importunately demanded his ſon. The proceſſion approached, and the body, wrapped in the fatal ſtandard, was depoſited before

fore him. The Inca, after viewing it for ſome time in ſilence, beckoned to the attendants and his court to retire. They obeyed; and he, having ſhut himſelf up in the inmoſt receſs of the palace, with the only object of his ſorrow, approached it, and with a trembling hand lifting up the veil, as ſoon as the bloody corpſe appeared, he uttered a cry, and fell backward on the ground. Pale, ſpeechleſs, cold, and motionleſs, here he, for ſome time, remained. But his grief, at length, reviving as his ſenſes returned, he indulged, without reſtraint, its powerful emotions. A hundred times he embraced his ſon, as often he clung to his livid lips, and preſſing to his boſom that heart, which no longer beat reſponſive to his own, he importuned Heaven to reſtore him to life, though at the expence of his own. One while, contemplating the wound, he waſhed off with his tears the blood that was congealed in it; another, fixing ſtedfaſtly his looks on the eyes of his ſon, he fancied he might ſtill trace ſome wanderings of life. "Ah!" ſays he, "if this "cold body could revive! if theſe eyes could "behold me again! Alas! there is no hope! "Theſe eyes are cloſed; they are cloſed for "ever. Neither his graces, his beauty, nor "his virtues, could protract his days; and this "is all that remains of a ſon, in whom my glory

"and

"and my happineſs were centred." Thus, forgetting his proſperity and his triumphs, he yielded himſelf up to the tranſports of grief.

When this guſt of paſſion was abated, and nature overborne by its violence was fallen into a liſtleſs dejection, this unhappy father ſuffered himſelf to be ſeparated from the melancholy remains of his child. His friends, and eſpecially Alonzo, attempted to conſole him. "Ah! al-
"low me," ſaid he, "to pay to nature the tri-
"bute of a feeling heart. I have taſted the cup
"of felicity; I have drank up its ſweets. The
"dregs are bitter, but I muſt exhauſt them. My
"ſon, my dear ſon, had filled my imagination
"with ſo many delightful illuſions! with ſo many
"ſeducing hopes!—Grief ſucceeds to joy, and
"alas! will be of longer duration. It knows no
"intermiſſion, and joy is flown from my heart,
"never more to return."

They enlarged to him on his power, the care requiſite to confirm it, the propereſt means to preſerve it. "How ſhall I," ſays he, "ſupport
"the oppreſſive burden? Am I a God to watch
"over an immenſe empire, and be continual-
"ly, and every where preſent, ſubſervient to
"its wants? Let my brother be brought hither.
"Yes, I wiſh to appeaſe him; and, I truſt, the
"ſight of my tears will call forth his pity, and
"convince

"convince him that I am more wretched than "himſelf."

Huaſcar, manacled, appeared before Ataliba. "Behold," ſaid the afflicted father, "Cruel man, "behold how dear you have coſt me!"—"It "well becomes thee," anſwered the irritated Huaſcar, "to reproach me with one death, when "ten thouſand Incas have fallen victims to thy "rage! Thou weepeſt, tyger! thou oughteſt to "weep; but is he the object of thy tears? Go "view the ravages of murder amongſt the ſub-"jects of thy father; behold Cuſco, its palaces, "its temples glutted with the blood of old-men, "women and infants, its walls deſtroyed, its "fields converted into graves; then lament thy "ſon, if thou dareſt."

Theſe dreadful words extinguiſhed in the heart of Ataliba the feeling of his own diſtreſs: The King ſupplanted the Father. He glanced at his lieutenants an inquiſitive look, and their ſilence acquieſced in what he had heard. "Is "it then true?" ſaid he: "And by what blind "fury have ye rendered me execrable on earth! "This only was wanting to complete my mis-"fortunes." Then, falling back on his throne, and turning his eyes from the light, he for ſome time remained abſorbed in woe, and breathed only in ſighs. "Till the moment that your

"ſon

"ſon fell," ſaid Palmore, touched at his ſorrow, "your people obeyed my commands; but, from "that inſtant, their grief, transformed to frenzy, "would hear no reſtraint. Puniſh them, if you "will, for having loved him too much; or pardon "their deſpair, which had but too juſt a cauſe; "the ſufferings of your own heart will plead their "excuſe. They have revenged your ſon, as they "would have revenged yourſelf."

"Huaſcar," replied Ataliba after a long and painful ſilence, "ſee to what dreadful exceſſes "nations are impelled, when diſcord and war "have once broken the moſt ſacred ties, and dri-"ven from the heart the ſuggeſtions of nature. "Let us ſtifle theſe exceſſes in a mutual embrace. "Take back your ſceptre and your empire, and "forgive me your misfortunes."

Huaſcar, indignant, rejected the offer, and ſaid: "Go, thou murderer of my family, go "reign over the dead, enthrone thyſelf on ruins, "and applaud thyſelf, at the proſpect of carnage, "and deſolation. Such is the empire thou of-"fereſt to me. From thee I wiſh only for death. "Keep thy gifts, thy commiſeration; keep the "reward of thy crimes; let them perpetuate thy "ſhame; and let the wretches I have left thee, to "make thee more deteſted, be condemned to o-"bey thee."

You

"You know," replied Ataliba, "well you "know, that I am free from the crimes you lay to "my charge; but your ſufferings make you un-"juſt. I leave it for time to reduce you to reaſon. "You will one day remember that I deteſted war, "that I ſolicited you for peace, that I, more deep-"ly wounded and depreſſed than yourſelf at the "calamities we have brought on each other, ſo-"licit it ſtill. You will then find your brother "what you now ſee him, flexible, humane, com-"paſſionate, and juſt. Adieu. I leave you in "theſe walls a captive, indeed, but a captive no "longer than you yourſelf chooſe. The very day "when, on the altar of the Sun, our father, you "will conſent to ratify with an oath a treaty of al-"liance and inviolable peace, your throne, and "your empire, undiminiſhed, ſhall again be re-"ſtored."

CHAP. XXXVII.

THE citadel of Cannara was the priſon of the captive King. The conqueror there left a faithful guard under the ſevere Corambé. He ſent Palmore to govern, in his name, the ſtates of Cuſco; and reſtoring, on his way to the vales of Riobamba, Mulliambo and Ilinica, the labourers drafted from thence, he returned without pomp to Quito, attended by the bier of his unfortunate ſon.

The arrival of Ataliba exhibited the moſt affecting picture of public diſtreſs. His family, in the deepeſt affliction, came forth to meet him. An innumerable crowd accompanied them; but not a voice was heard to felicitate the conqueror: every heart was occupied with ſympathy for the father; and had night concealed from his view the concourſe that ſurrounded him, he might, by the ſighs, which interrupted the general ſtillneſs, have ſuppoſed himſelf in a deſart, where ſome bewildered wretches were invoking in their diſtreſs the aſſiſtance of Heaven.

In this multitude, and in the midſt of the Inca's family, appeared a woman diſtracted. Her veil rent, her hair diſhevelled, her boſom torn, her eyes wild, her paleneſs, the convulſions of grief which diſtorted every feature, her hands compreſſed and extended towards Heaven; every thing beſpoke the mother, and a mother in deſpair.

At the moment ſhe came within ſight of the Inca, he deſcended from his ſeat, haſted to meet her, and taking her to his boſom: "My be-"loved," ſaid he, "the Sun, our father, hath "recalled thy ſon. He diſpoſes of his children "as he pleaſes. Happy is he whom innocence, "virtue, glory and love, attend to the tomb! "His harveſt is ended; he hath quitted the field "of life. Thy ſon hath lived too little for us, but "enough for himſelf: he hath carried with him, "what years can ſcarcely acquire, and what "one moment might have taken away, univer-"ſal regret and affection. Let us be ſorry to "ſurvive him: the mourner is more worthy of "compaſſion than the perſon for whom he la-"ments. But let us not, by the exceſs of our "grief, arraign his deſtiny, nor reproach the "Sun for reſuming one of his gifts." Slight ſorrows may be ſoothed by truths like theſe, but their power is ineffectual to aſſuage the anguiſh

anguiſh of a mother! She required to ſee her ſon; and at the inſtant his remains were placed before her, with a cry that proceeded from her very entrails, ſhe threw herſelf upon the lifeleſs body, embraced it, claſped it to her heart, overwhelmed it with her tears, till, ſuffocated and exhauſted, ſhe ſunk, inconſcious of her grief.

The Inca, in the arms of Alonzo, felt his wounds bleed afreſh at the ſight. The young man mingled his tears with the tears of his friend, and the nephews of Montezuma, at the deſolation of an auguſt family, thought on their own misfortunes.

Acilcé (ſo this unhappy mother was called) was carried into the palace; and the Inca proceeded to the temple, where the corpſe of his ſon, ſprinkled with perfumes, was lodged, till the day appointed for the funeral.

After an humble ſacrifice of thanks to the Sun, the Inca departed from the temple, and under the portico, where his people were aſſembled, he elevated his voice, and demanded their attention. "My cauſe was juſt," ſaid he, "and our God "hath protected it; but the blind ardour of my "troops, in avenging my ſon and myſelf, hath "diſhonoured my victory; and the exceſſes com-"mitted in my name are puniſhed in me. I "wiſh, my people, fully to expiate every inſtance

" of cruelty and injuſtice. But it is enough for " your King to be unhappy; complete not his " miſery by imputing to him guilt. Guilty he is " not. When at Cannara ſo much blood was " ſpilt, I was expiring there; when Cuſco was " ſacked, I was not preſent; ſuch ravages I deteſt. " In the name of the God who hath puniſhed me, " I conjure you to ſpare me the reproach. May " my name be clean forgotten, rather than remem- " bered with the addition of cruel! The King, " my brother, whom fate hath ſubjected to my " power, ſhall be an example of my forbearance, " in oppoſition to himſelf. Should, however, the " cry of calamity reach your ears, ſhould it tell " you that Ataliba was violent and ſanguinary; " O my people, raiſe your voice, and reply that " Ataliba was unhappy."

The ſame evening, in company with Alonzo, ſeeking to conſole his dejection, he ſaid: " You " know, my friend, with what horror our diſ- " cords inſpired me; the event hath exceeded " my fears; and in this abyſs of evils I ſee my " melancholy forebodings but too amply ful- " filled. Whoever voluntarily engages in war " becomes reſponſible for all the crimes and ca- " lamity inſeparable from it. To hope for mo- " deration from thoſe, who are purpoſely

" aſſembled

"aſſembled to murder, is to expect that the head-
"long torrent of the mountain will ſuſpend its
"courſe at your bidding. No King was ever
"more determined than myſelf to repreſs the im-
"petuoſity and abuſe of victory; yet, notwith-
"ſtanding, how many millions of mankind re-
"gard me as their ſcourge!"

"Alas! Prince," replied Alonzo, "if man,
"when he hearkens to his paſſions, be ſo liable
"to obey their influence, and is incapable of con-
"trolling himſelf, how will he reſtrain an un-
"ruly multitude, to whom he himſelf hath in-
"truſted the dangerous licence of committing
"evil! But this whole empire is witneſs, that
"the inflexible King of Cuſco compelled you
"to take up arms. Load not yourſelf with
"unjuſt reproaches; and if thoſe whom war
"hath made unhappy ſhould accuſe you, let
"your virtues vindicate your innocence, and
"repel the injury by clemency and kind-
"neſs."

Theſe words revived the courage of Ataliba; and his grief was ſuſpended, till the day which had been appointed for the funeral of Zoraï. This was the feſtival of the Sun, when, repaſſing the equator, he again enters into our hemiſphere, and returns to diſpenſe ſpring and

ſummer among the inhabitants of the north. It was alſo the feſtival of paternity.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

AFTER the hymns, vows, and uſual offerings, the Monarch, on a throne, erected in a ſpacious avenue * before the temple, with the Caciques at his feet, and the old men who were judges of the manners †, beheld the fathers of families approaching, each preceded by his children, who were arrived at the age of youth.

Having bowed in homage before the Inca, the father, who bore in his hands a bundle of palm-branches, diſtributed them to ſuch of his children as had faithfully performed the ſacred duties of nature. Theſe palm-branches are monuments of filial piety. Every year, each of the children, whoſe obedience and affection have obtained this reward, adds it to his trophy; and of theſe branches acquired in his youth, he compoſes a canopy for the paternal ſeat, from whence himſelf will one day govern his deſcendants.

* This place was called *Cuci-pata*, the place of rejoicing.

† The name of theſe magiſtrates was *Lacta-Camayu*.

This

This ſeat, in each family, was like a conſecrated altar: the head of the family alone had a right to ſit upon it; and the palm-branches that crowned it, while they recalled to his children his virtues, admoniſhed them alſo to obey him, who himſelf knew how to obey; and revere him, who revered his father. At the approach of death, he cauſed himſelf to be placed under this venerable trophy, and there yielded up his laſt breath. When buried, theſe branches were placed by his children to ſhade his tomb. The ſevereſt menace a father could utter, to a child that had forgotten his duty, was: "Unhappy child! what mean you? if you are "unworthy of my affection, you will have no "palm-branches to adorn your grave." This then was the evidence and pledge that each father produced to the Monarch, as their general father, of the obedience, zeal, and affection of his children.

If any one had neglected the duties of filial piety, to him the palm-branch was refuſed. The father, with a ſigh, ſubmitted to the law, and became the accuſer of his ſon. Regretting the painful neceſſity, he feelingly diſcloſes the truth. If the inſtance of diſobedience be flagrant, the rebellious child is exiled from the houſe of his father. Condemned, during this excluſion, to the

the diſgrace of being uſeleſs, he is neither allowed to cultivate the domain of the Sun, the fields of the Inca, thoſe of the widow, the orphan, nor the infirm; even the field that affords his father ſubſiſtence is interdicted to his profane hands. The time of expiation is limited by the law. The unhappy youth anxiouſly numbers the tedious moments; and is obſerved, alone, eſtranged from his friends and his family, lingering inceſſantly round his paternal habitation, without daring to approach the threſhold. He, whoſe exile expires with the cloſe of the year, enters, on the anniverſary, again into favour; the Decurions * bring him back before the throne of the Monarch; his father opens his arms in token of reconciliation; and he inſtantly ruſhes into them with the ſame eagerneſs as the wretch, that hath long been toſſed on a tempeſtuous ocean, clings to the firſt ſhore upon which he is thrown. From this time, he is reinſtated in the full rights of innocence: for, after a criminal is puniſhed, it is not the cuſtom among this wiſe people to cut him off from all hope of regaining the eſteem of mankind. When an offence is once expiated it leaves no ſtain behind; even the remembrance of it is totally effaced.

* *Chinca-Camayu*, thoſe who have the charge of ten.

After

After theſe uſeful leſſons of clemency and ſeverity, the Monarch thus addreſſed them: "Ye "fathers, hear me. Like you I am a father; "I participate this relation alſo with yourſelves: "your children are mine. For what is royalty "but a general paternity? This is the moſt "honourable diſtinction that the Sun, who is "the father of nature, could confer. I come "then, as reſponſible for your rights, to con-"firm them to you, and as the exemplar of "your duties to inſtruct you: for your rights "are founded on your duties, and your titles "reſult from your merit. Life is the gift of "Heaven, who diſpenſes it according to its plea-"ſure. Beware then not to arrogate to your-"ſelves the power of conferring it, and know that "ye merit not the name of fathers till, having "received from the hands of nature your new-"born offſpring, and remitted it into the boſom "of its mother, ye watch over the lives of "both, and exert every effort to provide for "their wants, and ſecure their repoſe. And, "in this, ye do no more than the vulture, the "ſerpent, the tyger, the moſt ferocious of brutes, "for their young. What diſtinguiſhes and "conſecrates the character of a father is edu-"cation, the care of ſowing and cultivating in "his children the experience that he himſelf

"hath

" hath acquired, which is the only gain of life,
" and the wiſdom that ſprings from it, which
" alone can compenſate the evils we endure.
" To form, from the tendereſt age, both by your
" inſtructions and example, a ſoul to virtue, a
" heart to ſenſibility, a citizen to obedience, a
" huſband, a faithful friend, a father, who, in
" his turn, may be revered and beloved by his
" children; in a word, a man, according to the
" views of nature and ſociety, is the object of
" your duties, your merits, and your titles; as al-
" ſo the foundation of your rights.

" And ye, children, remember that nature
" hath prolonged the weakneſs and ignorance of
" man, but to bind him the cloſer to thoſe who
" gave him birth, and habituate him, from ne-
" ceſſity, to depend on, and love, them. Had
" ſhe intended to diſpenſe with this tribute of
" affection and gratitude, ſhe would have fur-
" niſhed him with the means of living inde-
" pendently, almoſt as ſoon as he entered into
" life, and have given him the power to provide
" for himſelf. His long infancy is deſtitute of
" ſtrength and underſtanding; his weakneſs hath
" no reſcource in agility, artifice, or inſtinct.
" Such is the conſtitution of nature to compel
" a child to love and reverence his parents.
" She ſeems to have left him to them, that they

" might

"might acquire merit by their cares, and to "have acted like a cruel ſtep-mother, that their "tenderneſs to their offspring might be more "fully diſplayed. Thus, in with-holding every "thing from him, ſhe ſupplies him with every "thing by paternal affection. Recal then your "infancy; and reflect that whatever was neceſ-"ſary, during that long ſtate of weakneſs, to "ſecure you from want, or protect you from "danger, your parents ſupplied; that nature "had caſt you upon the rocks of life, confiding "in their love for your ſupport. But that for "which ye are more indebted to their tender "vigilance is the knowledge of conducting your-"ſelves happily through life. Deſtitute of their "inſtructions, which have rendered you gentle, "humane, and obedient to the laws of equity, "reaſon, and wiſdom, ye would have been, like "your anceſtors, ſavage, ſtupid, and ferocious. "Love then your parents for teaching you the "right application of life, which derives its "charm from innocence, and its value from vir-"tue."

At theſe words tears of joy and love flowed down from every eye. The children, in tranſports of gratitude, claſped the knees of their fathers, while they, with the conſcious ſatisfaction of having performed their duty, embraced their

their children. The Inca, at this ſight, felt, more than ever, the loſs of his ſon. "Mercileſs "war," ſaid he, "but for thee, and thy furies, I "ſhould have partaken the joy and the glory of "theſe good fathers. He had been preſent, and "would have received the firſt palm-branch from "my hand. Who hath deſerved one better?" He added no more: ſobs ſtifled his voice. For ſome moments he remained ſilent and diſſolved in tears. At length, he proceeded: "No, let "my ſon be brought hither; he ſhall not be de-"prived of the laſt tribute of love and praiſe. "From the height of Heaven, he will hear the "ſorrowful voice of a father, and will pity my "diſtreſs."

His command was obeyed: and the funeral bed, on which the body of Zoraï lay, was placed at the foot of the throne. "People," cried the Monarch, haſtening towards the corpſe, "be-"hold this pattern of filial love; behold the "moſt affectionate, reſpectful, and amiable of "children. Such hath he been, from his birth "to his death. Immediate pleaſure, hopes yet "more delightful, every thing that could give "the heart of a father conſolation and joy, "were the reward of my cares, and the preſage "of your happineſs beneath his reign. It was "impoſſible that ſo good a ſon ſhould not have

"been

" have been a good King. A taſte for goodneſs,
" a love of order, and an attachment to juſtice,
" were congenial with his ſoul. Glory he
" eſteemed only as the companion of virtue;
" falſehood he deteſted as the paraſite of vice;
" and truth he always adored. Magnanimous
" without oſtentation, and modeſt with dignity,
" ſimplicity was his diſtinguiſhing character,
" and he loved it where-ever it appeared. His
" birth he regarded in no other light than as it
" deſtined his life to the happineſs of the world;
" and the title of ſon of the Sun was ſo far
" from filling him with pride, that it continu-
" ally rendered him humble, by making him
" feel the weight of the duties it impoſed. If
" any one of the young Incas appear more
" deſerving than I, to govern this auguſt em-
" pire, he, would he often ſay to me, ſhould
" fill your place on the throne; it is my duty to
" ſurrender it to him. Judge then if he would
" have made you happy! Ye would have been
" his ſubjects; and his father, ſtill more happy,
" would have expired in the arms of ſuch a ſuc-
" ceſſor, without a care. A juſt God, however,
" was unwilling to afflict the ſenſibility of his
" ſoul with the crimes and ravages of a war,
" alas! too deſtructive. My ſon would have
" poured forth his tears over this trophy of my

 " victory,

" victory, this ſtandard ſteeped in ſo much blood.
" He is no more. We have loſt, I, the moſt vir-
" tuous of ſons, ye, the moſt virtuous of Princes.
" Let us ſubmit, and pay him the gloomy ho-
" nours of the tomb."

On this, the Monarch, at the head of his family and people, accompanied the body of his ſon to the temple, where it was placed on a throne of gold, fronting the image of the Sun, with the ſtandard that coſt him his life beneath his feet, and the palm of filial love in his hand.

Cora was not in the temple. The eyes of Alonzo ſought her there, but not being able to find her, his heart was ſeized with terror.

The Monarch, on his return from the temple, ſent for him. " My friend," ſaid he, " having
" now performed the melancholy office, it is
" time that the Father ſhould give place to the
" King, and that I ſhould begin to prepare for
" this formidable enemy, of whoſe attack you
" have warned me. My hope relies on your
" zeal, experience, and valour."——" It ſhall
" not be deceived," ſaid Alonzo, " and I wiſh
" to Heaven that the defence and ſafety of this
" empire may coſt only my blood! I would
" ſpill it with joy."——" O my friend!" ſaid the Inca, embracing him, " how have I deſerved
" from

"from you ſo generous and diſintereſted a "zeal?" .... At this inſtant, the King was informed that the High Prieſt of the Sun demanded an audience. Alonzo retired, and went to ſeek in ſlumber a conſolation for his ſufferings, and the dreadful apprehenſions that tortured his breaſt.

CHAP. XXXIX.

WHEN the ſoul is abandoned to a ſtorm of the paſſions, there is no evil ſo great as uncertainty. Agitated inceſſantly by the billows of hope and of fear, courage is unable to exert itſelf; even the reſolution to become unhappy is in continual fluctuation.

In ſuch a ſtate was the ſoul of Alonzo during this long and painful night. At length ſleep, in compaſſion to his diſtreſs, cloſed his heavy eye-lids. A noiſe, however, ſoon broke his ſlumber; he raiſed himſelf, and by the glimmering light of the dawn, perceived a venerable old man before him. Hoary locks hung round his forehead, and his countenance, though pale and

gloomy like a ſpectre, retained amidſt his grief a noble and majeſtic air. "I am the father of "Cora," ſaid he. "My daughter ſent me. I "come in compliance with her laſt requeſt. Go, "unhappy youth, and leave us to bear the "misfortunes in which you have involved us. "You have brought diſgrace and death into an "innocent family, which had been ſtill inno-"cent, but for you." At theſe words, the old man felt his knees ſinking beneath him, and fell down in a ſwoon. Alonzo, pale and trembling, ſtretched forth his arms and raiſed him. "Speak," ſaid he; "What have I done? Of "what misfortune have I been the cauſe?"— "Cruel man! can you aſk! Can you hear it "from the lips of a father? You ſpoke to us "of the virtues: benevolence and candour "ſmiled on your face; but vice and perfidy "lurked in your heart. Be ſatisfied. My "daughter, too weak, and too ſimple, alas! "to reſiſt your artifices, my daughter hath diſ-"cloſed to me her perjury and ſacrilege in "yielding herſelf the victim of your wiſhes. "Her pregnancy ſhe no longer could hide. To-"morrow her ſhame will be known: to-mor-"row, ſhe, her mother, and I, her innocent "ſiſters and brothers, will be led forth to re-"ceive the ſentence of the law. Solitude, in-

"famy,

" famy, and eternal ſterility will mark the place " of her birth. Our aſhes will be diſperſed. " We ſhall have no grave. Go then: my daugh- " ter conjures you. The unhappy girl ſtill loves " you; and when ſhe confided to me the ſecret of " her ſoul, ſhe made me promiſe not to betray it. " But ſhe dreads leſt your diſtreſs ſhould diſcover " you; and therefore intreats it as the only com- " penſation for her death, of which you are the " cauſe, that you will not be preſent at her ſuffer- " ings."

While the Indian was ſpeaking, remorſe and deſpair rent the heart of Alonzo. His eyes fixed on the ground, his hair riſing with horror, his motionleſs ſtupidity, all beſpoke a criminal condemned by his judge; and that judge his conſcience. He fell at the old man's feet, and, in broken accents, with difficulty articulated theſe words: " O my father! my crime you know; " but do you know by what fatality I was urged " to commit it? Do you know how terrible a " moment of fear and diſorder gave into my " power your dying daughter, and threw her " into my arms? I call both my God and yours " to witneſs, that in this dreadful danger, my ſole " reſolution was to ſave her. We are both un- " done, and have involved you in our ruin. I " ſeek not to appeaſe you. Behold my boſom,

"behold my ſword. Strike! avenge yourſelf." "I avenge myſelf! ah! know you not," ſaid the old man, "that vengeance is mad; that ſhe "adds crime to misfortune, and affords conſo- "lation only to the wicked? Go, thy blood "will neither reſtore to me the mother nor her "children. It will not exempt me from death, "and it would cauſe me to die guilty. Leave "me, at leaſt, my innocence: all elſe is gone. "You were diſtracted, I believe it: you are nei- "ther wicked nor perfidious; but when you are, "we have in heaven a God, to judge and to pu- "niſh."

"Divine old man!" cried Alonzo, "you "overwhelm me, you confound me.... And "ſhall ſhame, and death, and the worſt of tor- "ments, be the reward of thy virtues! And your "daughter, as virtuous, not leſs innocent than "you!... No, ye ſhall not die. Deſpiſe me "not ſo far as to think that I wiſh to conceal "myſelf and baſely fly. I will appear, confeſs "the whole, undertake your defence, and reſcue "you from the abyſs into which I have plunged "you, or periſh in it myſelf. But do you now "return to your wife and your children."

"Know you," aſked the old man, "any "protection againſt the laws, and the remorſe "that

"that follows the breach of an oath? I have "promiſed the Sun to remain ſubject to his "laws. My word and faith are ſtronger ties "to me than chains. An Inca knows no other; "and I will die without breaking them. You "are not bound by theſe ſevere laws, and there-"fore may remove. Let my daughter have the "conſolation to know that you are far from "danger. Spare her the horror of your puniſh-"ment."——"Go," ſaid Alonzo, penetrated with reſpect, grief, and gratitude, "go ſwear "to her that her lover will never deſert her. I "am a huſband and a father. There is no "danger that courage cannot ſurmount, when "inſpired by love and by nature." Extending his arms to the old man, who ſtill trembled, he continued, "My father, my father! either em-"brace me or pierce my heart. I cannot ſup-"port thy reſentment." The old man ſunk on his boſom, embraced, pitied, and forgave him; and they mingled, at parting, a profuſion of tears.

In the mean time a report was ſpread that the aſylum of the Virgins had been profaned; that one of them had broken her vows; that ſhe bore the fruit of a ſacrilegious paſſion; and that the Sun, provoked at this abominable perjury, required an expiation. A crime, till now, unknown, filled

filled every mind with horror. The misfortunes by which it became public, and of which it, perhaps, was the cauſe, the flames of civil war kindled between two brothers, all the blood ſhed in it, the ſon of Ataliba and heir to the crown, cut off from his people by an untimely death, this long train of crimes and calamities were inſtantly produced as ſigns of his reſentment, which the Sun, by an eclipſe, had already confirmed. It was feared that the jealous God might not be appeaſed, and that he might avenge on the whole people the injury done to his glory. O ſuperſtition! that a people, the moſt gentle and humane, ſhould cry out for vengeance from a God, whom, for his clemency, they adored! The general conſternation was not diſſipated till it was known that the Pontiff had impeached the criminal before the ſupreme tribunal, that the pit was dug and the pile prepared.

CHAP.

CHAP. XL.

ON this day the Sun concealed himſelf in dark clouds; and the gloomy appearance of nature augmented the terror with which every heart was inſpired. The King appeared, as uſual, in the portico of the Palace. A trembling multitude ſurrounded the throne; and thro' the aſſembled crowd the Pontiff, the Prieſts, and the officers of the law, opening themſelves a paſſage, conducted before the Inca the young and timid Prieſteſs. Her father overwhelmed with grief, her mother pale and fainting, her two ſiſters not leſs lovely than herſelf, and her three brothers, the hopes of an illuſtrious family, all, victims of the ſame law, appeared to receive their puniſhment.

Cora, whom, on account of her weakneſs and terror it was neceſſary to ſupport, ſunk down, without colour or life, at the ſight of her judge. After ſome time ſhe was revived, and he interrogated her. She replied with frankneſs: "It was on that horrible night, when the vol-

"cano

" cano threatened to deſtroy theſe walls: my " terror threw me into the arms of a deliverer. " This was my misfortune and my crime. Son " of the Sun, if it be poſſible to remit a part of " the puniſhment, attend to the voice of na- " ture, which oppoſes this law. I implore not " mercy for myſelf: I know that my death is " inevitable. But behold a father, a mother, " ſiſters, and brothers, who are guiltleſs; it is " for them that, with my dying breath, I aſk for " favour."

The father then ſpoke. " Inca, in a mo- " ment of diſtraction and terror my daughter " was weak, imprudent and frail; it is for " God, who ſees the heart, to judge it; but it " is my duty to accuſe the author of her ruin. " The firſt perſon guilty was myſelf. My " blind piety devoted my daughter to the wor- " ſhip of the altar, and there offered her a vic- " tim. In the moment of ſacrifice I heard the " ſighs of her heart, and, religiouſly cruel, hard- " ened mine againſt them. An unnatural fa- " ther, I beheld her tears, I ſaw her recline on " the boſom of her mother, ſeeking protection " againſt the violence of paternal power, and " without pity or remorſe, completed the par- " ricide. Her crime, alas! her firſt crime, was " obedience to me; her reſpect, her love for " me,

"me, have deſtroyed her. I am the executi-
"oner of my daughter. I drag her to puniſh-
"ment!" On uttering theſe words, the old man embraced his daughter; ſobs ſtopt his voice; his heart was agonized with grief, and the tears that guſhed forth from his eyes ſtreamed over the boſom of Cora. Every one ſympathized in his ſorrow.

The Monarch himſelf was moved; but, conſtrained by the law to exerciſe rigour, proceeded, and ordered Cora to diſcover her raviſher and accomplice.

Cora trembled, and remained for ſome time ſilent; but the inſtances of her judge at length compelled her to utter theſe words: "Son of
"the Sun, will you be more cruel and violent
"than the law? The law condemns me to
"death, and involves my family in my ruin.
"Is not this ſufficient? Do you require a new
"kind of parricide? Will you that, while I
"am bearing to the pit, in which I am to de-
"ſcend alive, the fruit of my fatal affection, I
"ſhould accuſe him alſo, who gave it being?
"Would you behold my entrails burſt aſunder
"in horror, and my aſtoniſhed infant rend it-
"ſelf from the bowels of its mother?"

Theſe words impreſſed the heart of Ataliba with terror; and, without inſiſting longer, he ordered, with a ſigh, the depoſitary of the laws to pro-

pronounce the fatal ſentence; when inſtantly Alonzo ſtruggled thro' the crowd, and proſtrating himſelf at the foot of the throne: "Inca," cried he, "it is I that am guilty; Cora is in-"nocent. Puniſh only her raviſher." At the appearance of Alonzo, and on hearing the language, which deſpair had prompted him to utter, the King ſhuddered; the people ſtood motionleſs with aſtoniſhment; and Cora, trembling and cold, exclaimed as ſhe fell, "Alas! could not "I then ſave him!"—"No," replied Alonzo, "ſhe deſerves not blame. She was inſenſible "when I bore her away; and her diſtracted ſoul "could neither conſent to, nor reſiſt her mis-"fortune."

The Inca was ſolicitous to ſave Alonzo. "Stranger," ſaid he, "our religion is not "yours; you are ignorant of our laws; and "what in our eſtimation is a crime, is in yours "only an error, which I have no right to pu-"niſh. Leave us. Our laws oblige only my "ſubjects and myſelf. You are imprudent, "but not criminal, at leaſt, if you uſed no vio-"lence; and Cora, alone, has a right to ac-"cuſe you."——"No, no," ſaid ſhe, "a charm, "no leſs delightful than irreſiſtible, gave me "up to his wiſhes. Ceaſe, Alonzo, ceaſe to "arrogate my crime to yourſelf. You make

"me

"me ſuffer a thouſand deaths."—"So far is ſhe "from accuſing you," ſaid the King, "that, "you hear, ſhe declares you innocent." "Can "I be innocent," cried Alonzo, "after having "dug a grave beneath her feet, a grave, into "which you compel her to deſcend alive? O "height of horror! this dreadful grave yawns "to my view, ready to receive her; and am I "innocent! I ſee the kindling pile, on which "her father, mother, and all her kindred are "ſpeedily to periſh; and am I innocent! Inca, "your friendſhip for me hath blinded your "judgment; and you wiſh to overlook my of-"fence. But I, more juſt than you, feel its "malignity, and acknowledge my guilt. For-"give, ye unhappy victims of an infatuated paſ-"ſion, forgive me. At leaſt, I will not undergo "the ſhame and the pain of having ſurvived "you; and, if ye are led to death, I will pre-"cede you; I will aſcend the pile, and devote "myſelf, the firſt, to the flames. There, this "ſword, which ought to defend a virtuous peo-"ple, and a King, whom I am no longer wor-"thy of calling my friend, this ſword ſhall "pierce my heart. I only aſk, before my death, "the favour to be heard."

"I am neither ungrateful nor perfidious," reſumed he, with firmneſs. "Received in the

" court of the Inca, honoured with his confidence,
" loaded with his kindneſs, I never deſigned to be-
" tray his hoſpitality. I am young, impetuous,
" and too ſuſceptible of paſſion. I ſaw Cora;
" love inflamed my heart, but I reſpected her a-
" ſylum. It was not till the terrible moment
" when the mountain, roaring, threw forth a de-
" luge of fire, the heavens in flames, and the earth
" quaking, preſented on all ſides the inevitable
" horrors of a thouſand deaths, that, through the
" ruined walls of the ſacred incloſure, I ſought,
" ſeized and bore off Cora.

" She hath told you that ſhe yielded! and
" who would not have yielded like her! Is a
" law to extinguiſh in us the feelings of na-
" ture ſufficient to ſuppreſs its emotions? Ye
" require from youth the inſenſibility of old
" age! from weakneſs the moſt arduous con-
" queſt of ſtrength and virtue! Ah! it is ſu-
" perſtition, that, in the name of a God, com-
" mands you to be cruel. Will ye obey its
" dictates? Do ye forget that the God, whom
" ye worſhip, is, in your eſtimation, good-
" neſs itſelf? What! can the Sun, who him-
" ſelf is the ſource of fertility, can he, who
" enables every being to propagate its kind,
" make it criminal to love! This paſſion is it-
" ſelf an emanation from him by whom ye

" are

" are enlivened. It is the ſame genial principle
" that pervades metals, plants, the veins of ani-
" mals, and, more, than all, the heart of man; it
" is this fire that ye worſhip in its inexhauſtible
" ſource. Ye condemn its influence; and becauſe
" a Virgin, innocent, feeble and timid, hath yield-
" ed to the moſt natural emotions of the heart,
" and the moſt delightful that Heaven hath in-
" ſpired, her father, her mother, her ſiſters and
" brothers will be condemned to periſh with her,
" in the midſt of torments! No, people, I
" call to witneſs your God and mine, for the Sun
" is his image, that theſe horrors cannot be grate-
" ful to him; and that the law which commands
" them he never preſcribed. A man was its au-
" thor; it came from ſome jealous, proud, and
" tyrannical king, who attributed to his God a
" heart like his own.

" Ye have been told that the Sun hath made
" it a crime for his Prieſteſs to become a mother,
" and that to expiate the crime, the moſt horrid
" torments are neceſſary; ye have been told it,
" and your ſimplicity was credulous! Alas!
" and were not your fathers alſo told that their
" Gods, the ſnake, the vulture, and the tyger,
" required of a mother to ſpill on their altars the
" blood of her innocent ſuckling; and like you,

" the mother, devoutly cruel, ſacrificed her babe. " This worſhip ye have aboliſhed; and yours, not " leſs barbarous, is ſtill more irrational.

Then, like one inſpired by a God, and as tho' the God himſelf had ſpoken from his own mouth: " O King, ye people," cried he, " learn to di- " ſtinguiſh by infallible proofs between that truth " which comes from Heaven and the errors of " men. Caſt your eyes on nature: obſerve the " order and deſign that every where appear. " Whoever the God may be that preſides over " this immutable order, which himſelf hath eſta- " bliſhed, he hath adapted to it his laws. And " of what import to this eternal order is the vow " that a young and feeble mortal hath impru- " dently made, to wither, like a fruitleſs plant, in " the languor of ſterility? Was this what na- " ture, when ſhe formed her, enjoined? Be- " hold," ſaid he, ſeizing the veil of Cora, and rending it, with a boldneſs that commanded re- ſpect, " behold this boſom: theſe are the proofs " for what her God hath deſigned her. From " theſe two ſources of life, acknowledge the " right, and the ſacred duty of becoming a mo- " ther. It is thus that the God, who forms no- " thing in vain, declares and explains his de- " ſigns."

During

During this addreſs of Alonzo, a confuſed murmur prevailed among the multitude, indicating a change in their minds. The Monarch availed himſelf of the moment to fix their conviction. "He ſpeaks," ſaid he, "the language "of reaſon, and reaſon is ſuperior to law. No, "my people, I muſt confeſs that this cruel "law was not given by the wiſe Manco: his "ſucceſſors framed it; they thought to become "acceptable to the God, whoſe injury they "avenged, but they were miſtaken. This er-"ror exiſts no longer; the truth reſumes its "rights. Let us thank this ſtranger, who hath "undeceived us, enlightened us, and induced us "to revoke an inhuman law. This is too im-"portant a benefit not to efface an unfortunate "imprudence. Let the Prieſteſſes of the Sun "have no other reſtraint but a pure and volun-"tary zeal; and let thoſe, who repent the te-"merity of their vow, be inſtantly abſolved "from it. A juſt God cannot deſire to be "ſerved with reluctance; and his altars were "never raiſed to be ſurrounded by ſlaves."

Thus ſpoke the Prince, animated by the double joy of aboliſhing a deſtructive abuſe, and preſerving the life of a friend. The aged father of Cora, proſtrated himſelf, with his children, at the knees of the Monarch; all the peo-

ple, with hands lifted towards Heaven, broke forth in ſhouts of joy; Alonzo, in triumph, threw himſelf at the feet of his miſtreſs. Alas! ſhe had again fainted in the arms of her mother, and her eyes, ſtill dim, were unable to perceive her lover. On ſeeing him ſacrifice himſelf for her ſake, anxiety, affection and terror had overwhelmed her. Cold, trembling, inanimate, her feeble knees ſinking under her, ſhe hung reclined on the breaſt of her mother, who, ſuppoſing ſhe had, for the laſt time, embraced her, had not the cruelty to call her back to life. It was the cry of nature that reached to Heaven from the hearts of fathers, mothers, and a whole people, in uniſon, that re-animated her ſenſes. She returned from the ſlumber of death, reſpired, opened her eyes, and ſaw herſelf in the arms of Alonzo, who in tranſports ſaid, as he embraced her: "Live, dear object of my heart; thou "art mine; the fatal law is no more.—"What "ſay you? what do you, unhappy man?" ſaid ſhe, "begone and let me die."—"No thou "ſhalt live," replied Alonzo. "Nature and "love have prevailed; the ſacred names of fa-"ther and mother are no longer criminal in "us." At theſe words, Cora, in the exceſs of ſurpriſe and joy, ſighed, preſſed to her breaſt her lover and her deliverer; and, too weak to

ſupport

ſupport ſo violent and ſudden a reverſe, fainted once more.

Whilſt Alonzo was employed in recovering her, the people preſſed around to ſee and congratulate them. A father, a mother diſtracted, their children ſtill trembling, Cora, who in the arms of Alonzo with difficulty was recalled to life, the anxiety, the agitation, the tenderneſs of her lover, who feared leſt ſhe ſhould inſtantly expire, the joy and rapture of the people around them, all united to form ſo delightful a ſcene, that the King, the Incas, and the Mexican heroes could not refrain from tears. Amazilli eſpecially, and her faithful Telaſco, partook of their tranſport. "Ah! Telaſco," ſaid this charming maid, "how happy will theſe lovers be! "They, like us, experience a tranſition from "the exceſs of misfortune to ſupreme felicity. "How ſincerely will they love one another!" —"As we do," ſaid Telaſco. "Heaven has "beſtowed upon them two hearts entirely like "ours."

The crowd retiring, and the Monarch, with the Incas, having re-entered the palace, Cora and her lover were called; and the Prieſt ſpoke to them to this effect. "Cora is free. A God "who wills nothing but love, can never re-"quire conſtraint; and I have the ſatisfaction,

"before

" before I go down to my grave, to ſee, from " among the number of his laws, a cruel one " expunged, which was not worthy of him. " But, in his ſight, the ſanctity of marriage is " inviolable. He requires that an interchange " of mutual fidelity in his preſence ſhall con- " ſecrate the ties."—" Ah! Heaven and Earth " are my witneſſes," cried Alonzo, " that I am " the huſband of Cora; that ſhe is the half of " myſelf; that ſhe hath received my plighted " faith, that my life is devoted to her; and " that it is my moſt ſacred duty to deſerve her " love. I only aſk, wiſe and virtuous Incas, " that we may deliberate whether your religion " or that of my country be more worthy of the " God, whom the univerſe ought to adore. I " hope that we ſhall ſoon have but one altar; " and that, at the foot of this altar, under the " eyes of the ſupreme Being, the religion moſt " acceptable to him may ſanctify the vows of " nature and of love."

CHAP.

CHAP. XLI.

SUPERSTITION *, which ranges the earth with hallowed chains to fetter the nations, was enraged to behold the abrogation of the only law that ſhe had dictated to the worſhippers of the Sun. But, to conſole herſelf, ſhe turned her eyes towards Europe where ſhe reigned, and Spain, where ſhe had eſtabliſhed the dreadful ſeat of her empire. Her triumph was there preparing; and it was at the time of celebrating her abominable feſtival, when the ſhip of Pizarro, having croſſed the vaſt ſeas, entered that famous gulph †, through which the ocean opens for itſelf a paſſage to the ſhores of Egypt and of Scythia.

This great man, entirely occupied with the importance of his meaſures, was revolving in deep reflection the formidable difficulties that

* *Superſtition.*] Fanaticiſm is the phrenzy of zeal. Superſtition is the delirium of piety. The one is the diſeaſe of violent ſpirits, the other of weak minds. Both profane religion; the one by its furies, and the other by its fears.

† The Gulph of Cadiz.

might

might embaraſs their progreſs. Of theſe, one was the ſituation of his fortune. The little gold he had acquired in his firſt voyage was loſt and diſſipated by his companions, to whom it had been intruſted. His undertaking, which, from the beginning, was accounted a mad one, had now no advocate. All confidence in it, and the aſſiſtance depending upon it, were loſt. Nothing leſs than the favour of the Prince was able to revive it. But, with what horror ought the court of Spain to have been filled, at the ravages and barbarities that were exerciſed in America? Are not theſe ravagers and ſcourges of India held in execration by their country, aſtoniſhed at their exceſſes? A young King eſpecially, whom the luſt of wealth had not yet corrupted, muſt deteſt them; and, from the opinion he entertains of their ferocious diſpoſitions, muſt conſider every ſolicitor as applying for a licence to imitate their example, and render his reign odious to the people of another hemiſphere. The lamentations of nature, the cries of religion, its miniſters thundering and darting forth anathemas on thoſe who had rendered it the accomplice of their ſacrilegious devaſtations; ſuch were the thoughts that occupied Pizarro, when a favourable gale brought him to the ſhores of Andaluſia, and the harbour of Palos, from whence embarked the intrepid

intrepid Columbus, when on the faith of a mariner, whom ſtorms had inſtructed *, he went to diſcover this unhappy New World.

Pizarro

* *Whom ſtorms had inſtructed.*] In fourteen hundred and eighty four, Alonzo Sanches de Huelua, going from the Canaries to Madeira, had been driven, it is ſaid, almoſt to St Domingo. He returned to Tercera with only four of his companions. In this iſland Chriſtopher Columbus, a famous pilot, by birth a Genoeſe, received them. They all died in his houſe, and it is reported, that from their journal he undertook the diſcovery of America.

*** As M. MARMONTEL, by implicitly following the writers of Spain, appears in the liſt of thoſe who have ſought to rob Columbus of his honeſt and well-earned glory, the following note is inſerted with the view of aſcertaining the juſtice of his claim. Should this volume ever reach M. MARMONTEL, I doubt not but he will approve the motive.

Dr ROBERTSON's Hiſtory of America, Vol. I. p. 434.

" Some Spaniſh authors, with the meanneſs of national jealouſy, " have endeavoured to detract from the glory of Columbus, by " inſinuating that he was led to the diſcovery of the New " World, not by his own inventive, or enterpriſing genius, " but by information which he had received. According " to their account, a veſſel having been driven from its " courſe by eaſterly winds, was carried before them far to " the weſt, and landed on the coaſt of an unknown country, " from which it returned with difficulty; the pilot, and three " ſailors, being the only perſons of the crew that ſurvived the " diſtreſſes which they ſuffered, from want of proviſions and fa- " tigues in this long voyage. In a few days after their arrival, " all the four died, but the pilot having been received into " the houſe of Columbus, his intimate friend, diſcloſed to him, " before his death, the ſecret of the diſcovery which he had " accidentally

Pizarro, on his arrival, took care to publiſh the news of his return at Truxillo, the place of his birth; and went immediately to Seville, where the young King kept his court. The

" accidentally made, and left him his papers containing a jour-
" nal of the voyage, which ſerved as a guide to Columbus in his
" undertaking. Gomara, as far as I know, is the firſt who
" publiſhed this ſtory, Hiſt. c. 13. Every circumſtance is de-
" ſtitute of evidence to ſupport it. Neither the name of the
" veſſel nor its deſtination is known. Some pretend that it
" belonged to one of the ſea-port towns in Andaluſia, and was
" ſailing either to the Canaries, or to Madeira; others that it
" was a Biſcayaner in its way to England; others a Portugueſe
" ſhip trading on the coaſt of Guinea. The name of the pilot"
[whence M. MARMONTEL learnt it he has not informed us, any more than the time of the diſcovery, or deſtination of the voyage] " is alike unknown, as well as that of the port in which
" he landed on his return. According to ſome, it was in Por-
" tugal; according to others in Madeira, or the Azores. The
" year in which this voyage was made is no leſs uncertain.
" Monſon's Nav. Tracts. Churchill, III. 371. No mention is
" made of this pilot or his diſcoveries by And. Bernaldes, or
" Pet. Martyr, the contemporaries of Columbus. Herrera,
" with his uſual judgment, paſſes over it in ſilence. Oviedo
" takes notice of this report, but conſiders it as a tale fit only
" to amuſe the vulgar. Hiſt. lib. II. c. 2. As Columbus held
" his courſe directly weſt from the Canaries, and never varied it,
" ſome later authors have ſuppoſed, that this uniformity is a
" proof of his having been guided by ſome previous information.
" But they do not recollect the principles on which he founded
" all his hopes of ſucceſs, that by holding a weſterly courſe, he
" muſt certainly arrive at thoſe regions of the Eaſt deſcribed by
" the ancients. His firm belief of his own ſyſtem led him to
" take that courſe, and to purſue it without deviation.

better

better to obſerve the manners and diſpoſition of the new court, Pizarro viſited it in diſguiſe. Every object in this deplorable country appeared changed, and the alteration drew forth his ſighs.

His firſt aſtoniſhment aroſe from the ſolitude of the cities, and the deſertion of the country, through which a contagion ſeemed to have paſſed. "What then," ſaid he to himſelf, "is it "to throw themſelves into the deſerts of the "New World, that theſe fertile and happy "fields have been forſaken!" Nor was he leſs ſurprized at the auſtere reſerve and the myſterious and taciturn gravity of this people, who formerly were ſhewy, ſprightly, full of candor and openneſs, preſerving a dignity even in their pleaſures, and a magnificence in their feaſts. Anxiety and dejection were now painted on every face; diſtruſt appeared in every eye; and fear compreſſed every heart.

Immediately on his arrival at Seville, he viſited every part of the city, and found ſilence and mourning wherever he came. Accidentally entering an extenſive ſquare, which was ſurrounded by churches and palaces, he beheld in the midſt of it a large pile, and near it a throne, adorned with purple and gold. He ſtopt to contemplate this ſolemn preparation, and ſaw a multitude

approaching but without tumult, and preſerving a gloomy ſilence, like that which terror inſpires. He inquired of every one around him, what ſacrilege, what parricide was to be puniſhed with ſo much ſolemnity, and whether the King were to preſide at the execution of criminals, as the ſplendor of the throne ſeemed to intimate. But no perſon anſwered. "Whoever you be," at length ſaid an old man of whom he enquired, "either ceaſe your attempts to inveigle us, or if "you have no ſuch intention, look, hear, and "tremble like ourſelves."

Pizarro ſoon beheld the terrible train of judges and avengers of the faith approaching. He ſaw them aſcend and ſeat themſelves on this awful throne. Serenity appeared on their faces, and pleaſure ſparkled in their eyes.

The victims advanced; the pile was kindled. A crowd of wretches, pale, trembling, bent beneath the preſſure of their chains, came forward to receive their ſentence. And this decree, which condemned them to be burnt alive, was pronounced with the tender and affecting tone of charitable aſſiſtance and indulgent goodneſs.

The young King had required that, at leaſt, in this dreadful moment, when they received their ſentence, it ſhould be permitted them, before the people, and in the view of Heaven, to

ſpeak,

ſpeak, defend themſelves and utter their complaints: a weak conſolation which he wiſhed to oppoſe to the rigours of this tribunal, but which, having irritated the judges, was treated as an inſult, and allowed to be practiſed but once.

In this number was an old man, who had been ſurpriſed in the obſervation of Judaical rites. In his early youth, promiſes and threatenings had prevailed on him to abjure his religion, but his mind, ſtill retaining the impreſſions received from the faith of his fathers, reproached him for having deſerted it, and induced him again to embrace it: in privacy and fear, he had addreſſed to Heaven the devotions of ancient Sion. His crime was diſcovered, and now on the brink of the grave he ſhunned not to avow it; he proceeded to his puniſhment, as a victim to the altar. But when he heard that all his goods, given up to the avarice of his judges, were ſtripped from his children, his fortitude inſtantly forſook him. "Barbarians!" ſaid he, "is it thus that you "devour your prey? I deſerved death, when I "betrayed my ſoul, when I diſavowed with my "mouth what I revered in my heart; but what "have my children done that they muſt be "ſtripped of the little property I left them? "They have borne, from their cradle, the yoke "of your new law; I gave them up to you.

"Ah! leave their mother, to feed theſe unfor-
"tunate ſufferers, one loaf ſprinkled with my
"blood, and let them ſteep it in their tears."

"What then," anſwered him, with a placid countenance, the chief of this horrible tribunal, "know you not that God viſits the ſins of the "fathers upon the children; and that whatever "belonged to thoſe who rebel againſt him be-"comes the property of the miniſters of his "vengeance, as the entrails of the victims are "allotted to the Prieſt; that the ſlave has not "any thing, which is not his maſter's; and, "in a word, that ſuch as you are born ſlaves "among Chriſtians. If thoſe goods, which no "longer are yours, be reſerved to ourſelves, it "is to uſe them better; and how can the pro-"perty of infidels be more properly employed, "than to reward the defenders of the faith? If "the labourer be worthy of his hire, ſhall he "that purſues error be deprived of his recom-"pence? and is it not very juſt that an accurſed "race ſhould pay, at their death, for the labo-"rious and ſalutary care of their exterminа-"tion?

"Shameleſs and faithleſs men," cries the old man, "the ſecular arm is at your direction, "and your hypocriſy inſolently abuſes the "power of oppreſſing us. But tremble leſt "Heaven,

"Heaven, at length ſhould no longer ſuffer "itſelf. . . ." They prevented him from proceeding; and he was inſtantly caſt into the flames.

The next was a young man, artleſs and timid, who was born amongſt Chriſtians, educated in their belief, and not having even an idea of the errors laid to his charge. He loved a girl as artleſs, as devout, and as tractable as himſelf, who loved him in return; an enraged rival accuſed him of hereſy; and this villain had for his accomplice a confident worthy of himſelf. In dungeons, and under tortures, the unfortunate youth had a thouſand times invoked Earth and Heaven to witneſs his orthodoxy and his innocence; but he was not regarded. On appearing before his judges, and ſeeing the pile, his lamentations and cries were redoubled. "Miniſters "of the God I worſhip, and ye, O people!" ſaid he, "I declare, with my dying breath, that "I have lived faithful to the religion of my "fathers. I believe all that our paſtors have "taught me from my childhood. Let me be "informed into what error I have involuntarily "fallen; I will abjure and deteſt it. What "aſk ye more?"——"We require from you a "ſincere confeſſion of your guilt."——"I am "ignorant of any. Let me, at leaſt, be con-

"fronted with my accuſers. Let theſe appear "and convict me in your preſence."—"No," rejoined they: "the intereſt of the faith does "not permit us to diſcover thoſe who watch "over its ſafety, and inform us of errors. "Have you not yourſelf declared that you have "no enemies?"—"Alas! no: I hate no one, "and I know not any one who can hate me." ——"Well, then, it is not hatred, but zeal, that "accuſes you, and a zeal that deſerves our "credit."——"O my father!" ſaid the youth to a Religious, who was exhorting him to prepare for death, "I am loth to die; theſe flames "make me ſhudder. Tell me what confeſſion "is expected from me; and innocent as I am, "I will accuſe myſelf."——"I teach you "falſehood!" ſaid this man, devoutly cruel, "God forbid. No, my ſon, rather ſuffer as a "martyr, than delude your judges. After all, "flatter not yourſelf that this tardy confeſſion "can avail you. It is now too late. Your guilt "ſhould have been acknowledged during your "confinement; at the approach of puniſhment, "it is not true repentance that ſpeaks, but fear; "and the language extorted by fear will not be "regarded." On this the young man gave way to the impulſe of grief, and the tears that guſhed down his cheeks, were accompanied by thoſe

thoſe of the beholders. "O God!" ſaid he, "they tell me that thy pure and holy religion is "the ſupport of innocence; yet thy miniſters!" .... They interrupted him to be dragged to the pile.

Whilſt a wreathe of flames enveloped him alive, and his ſhrieks pierced all hearts, a Moor, of almoſt the ſame age, but more hardy and courageous, was condemned as a blaſphemer for having murmured againſt fanaticiſm and its hateful tribunal. They pronounced ſentence upon him, and at the ſame time exhorted him to declare before God and man who could have inſtigated him againſt the avengers of the faith. "Ye people," cried he with indignation, "know ye whom they "would have me accuſe? It is my father: they "have named him to me in my chains, as the ac-"complice whom they earneſtly urge me to im-"peach. It is he whom they wiſh me to drag to "torture. They promiſe me indulgence if I "would be ſo baſe and unnatural as to blacken and "ſlander the author of my life. Ah! ſo far from "accuſing him, I call all the powers of Heaven "to teſtify his innocence. He groans like you, "but it is in the receſſes of his ſoul; and unleſs "tears be offenſive to our tyrants, he will never "offend them. More impatient than himſelf, I "have

" have ſpoken, I have loudly execrated this odious " tyranny. I have demanded, in the name of " Heaven, from what hatred of truth, from what " horror of innocence, the natural and ſacred " right of a lawful defence hath been forbidden " the accuſed? Why muſt the accuſer, exempt- " ed from appearing, be allowed to ſtrike in the " dark, like a cowardly aſſaſſin, and remaining " wrapped up in the mantle of the judge, be yet " accounted a witneſs? This infernal procedure, " this iniquitous preparation, theſe chains, theſe " priſons, theſe dungeons, a dreadful ſilence, all " the ſnares of artifice and falſehood, to ſurprize, " or to terrify an unhappy creature given up to " calumny, to the moſt ſubtle and blackeſt fraud; " lo, theſe are my inſtigators againſt them. " They hear me, my freedom wounds them. " They will puniſh me; but a day will come " when theſe villains will be unmaſked, and their " crimes will recoil on themſelves, like a de- " luge augmented by the vengeance of Hea- " ven."

At theſe words wrenching himſelf from the hold of his attendant: " Let me alone," ſaid he, " I acknowledge not the God whom my " executioners worſhip. O God of juſtice, God " of clemency, father of all men," cried he, " receive

"receive my ſoul." And, voluntarily dragging his chains, he threw himſelf into the flames.

He was followed by a crowd of youths of both ſexes, who had been privately educated under the law of the Koran, and, for this crime, were now given up to the Inquiſitors of the Faith. They were promiſed to be ſaved from puniſhment, if they would become Chriſtians. Weak, fearful, and credulous, they accepted the condition, and were immediately led to the pile. They claimed the promiſe, on the faith of which they had renounced their religion. "This "promiſe," it was replied, "will be accom-"pliſhed in another life. Ye will be ſaved "from a puniſhment, in compariſon of which "the preſent is nothing. My children, con-"ſider only that ye die in the faith, and too "happy, in ſubmitting to ſo ſlight an expiation, "reſign yourſelves without a murmur." Their tears were ineffectual; and from the midſt of the flames into which they were thrown, their arms were extended in vain: their ſuppliant arms fell; and the whole of them were ſoon after conſumed.

Pizarro, (who, at a diſtance from the tribunal, had heard only the cries, on ſeeing theſe victims heaped up on the pile and devoured by the flames, while the air reſounded with holy ſongs of

of joy, and the pious fanatics, lifting their hands to Heaven offered the ſmoke for incenſe) ſtricken with terror and compaſſion, ſaid to himſelf: "Hath Spain changed the object of her worſhip? "Hath ſhe adopted the Gods of India, whom the "ſavages adore, and whom they imbrue in their "blood?" He beheld the people penſive and intimidated, diſperſe; he left the ſcene; and on returning to his apartments there found Gonzalo, one of his brothers, who, being impatient to ſee him, was come to Seville.

CHAP. XLII.

AFTER the firſt emotions of tenderneſs and joy, Pizarro, having taken proper care that their converſation might neither be overheard nor interrupted, began with a recital of his adventures to Gonzalo. This was followed by a diſcovery of his intended voyage; and he concluded with inquiring what ſtrange revolution had happened during his abſence, in the genius, manners, and religion of his country; and what horrible feſtival he had juſt beheld celebrated?

"You

"You were too young and obſcure, when you "left this country," ſaid Gonzalo, "to be ac- "quainted with ſuch ſcenes; but as the ſucceſs "of your fortune depends upon them, it is pro- "per that I ſhould inform you. Attend then, "my brother, and ſigh.

"The Moors, our conquerors, were diſperſed "through Spain; where-ever they came they "brought with them arts, agriculture, and com- "merce; and while they inſtructed the minds of "the people, they ſoftened the ferocity of their "manners. The proſperity, grandeur, and opu- "lence of the kingdom, which was cultivated, "enriched, and adorned by their labours, de- "ſerved to have obliterated their invaſion and "ravages. When conquered, in their turn, "they only aſked for that freedom which the "laws allowed, and offered to live in ſubjection "to our Kings, if they might practiſe the re- "ligion of their fathers; and had not Iſabel- "la been blinded by ſuperſtition, no reign "would have ever been more happy or illuſtrious "than hers. But this Queen, who was poſ- "ſeſſed of genius and courage equal to the "greateſt of men, was unfortunately deluded "by a fanatic *, in whom ſhe implicitly con-

* Thomas Torquemada, a Dominican.

"fided,

" fided. From her earlieſt youth he had intoxi-
" cated her with a falſe zeal, and had induced
" her to ſwear, if ever ſhe aſcended the throne,
" to exterminate hereſy, and render the faith
" triumphant by ſword and fire. It was to ac-
" compliſh her raſh oath that ſhe had erected this
" tribunal.

" Armed with an enormous power, freed
" from all the laws by which innocence was
" protected, and conſecrated by a Pontiff *,
" who had delegated to it all his powers, this
" tyrant of the mind had exerciſed them with a
" ſacred horror †. It was in Seville itſelf, that
" the firſt of theſe barbarous ſacrifices was cele-
" brated, which is called *an act of faith* ‡.
" This execrable day coſt Spain twenty thou-
" ſand ſubjects: they fled in terror; and Afri-
" ca received them. In Caſtile and in Leon new
" fires were kindled; and thouſands of unhap-
" py people were caſt into the flames. The
" ſame ſcourge was extended to Arragon, and
" the ſame havoc followed. All Spain felt the
" laſh, and ſuperſtition beheld new fires, like

* Sixtus IV.

† *Exerciſed them with a ſacred horror.*] Within the ſpace of four years the Inquiſition had tried a hundred thouſand perſons, and burnt ſix thouſand of them.

‡ *Auto-de-fe.* The firſt was at Seville in 1480.

" ſo

"ſo many beacons lighted up from one king-
"dom to another, in which innumerable vic-
"tims were conſumed. Multitudes of the pro-
"ſcribed, having eſcaped from their perſecutors,
"abandoned themſelves to the mercy of the
"waves; and Africa was peopled again. At
"length Grenada, which had been conquered
"by the Moors, became in its turn a theatre
"of the moſt deplorable furies *. Ah Pizarro!
"what a province hath fanaticiſm ruined! An
"induſtrious, brave, intelligent people, who
"blended with their labours the pleaſures of
"feſtivity; more than thirty large cities in
"which the arts flouriſhed; a hundred others
"leſs opulent, but all rich and populous; two
"thouſand villages full of happy huſbandmen;

* *Of the moſt deplorable furies.*] The firſt edict, againſt the Jews, was in fourteen hundred and ninety-two. This edict compelled them to be converted, or to quit Spain. A hundred thouſand families either were, or pretended to be converted, eight hundred thouſand Jews retired into Portugal, Africa and the Eaſt.

The ſecond edict, againſt the Moors, was in fifteen hundred and one, which compelled them either to be baptized, or to leave the kindom in three months, under pain of being made ſlaves. An aſſembly of Theologues and Civilians had determined that it was lawful to uſe violence notwithſtanding the faith of treaties. Pope Clement VII. granted a diſpenſation to the Emperor Charles V. from the oaths, taken either by his predeceſſors or himſelf, to permit the Moors freely to exerciſe their own religion; and exhorted him to baniſh from Spain all who ſhould refuſe to embrace the Chriſtian faith.

" the moſt delightful and fertile fields on earth,
" all are loſt, all deſtroyed; death, horror, ſoli-
" tude extend through the whole; the tyranny of
" the mind, which, being more unjuſt and vio-
" lent, is of all kinds the moſt odious, hath there
" made vaſt graves, and reigns in ſilence over
" aſhes and ruins."

" Is this then," aſked Pizarro, " the reaſon
" that Spain hath been ſo little ſhocked at the ra-
" pine, and cruelties committed in America?"—
" Spain is hardened," replied Gonzalo, " by her
" own misfortunes." " And at what then would
" you expect ſhe ſhould be ſhocked and aſtoniſh-
" ed? Amongſt us, in her own boſom, ſhe ſees
" the moſt odious of crimes ſanctified. Huma-
" nity is diveſted of all her rights; the ties of
" blood are not regarded. Such is the triumph
" of falſe zeal, that the ſon accuſes his father, the
" father his children, and the wife her huſband.
" They are admitted, heard; and the accuſed ſuf-
" fers on their accuſation. On the ſlighteſt ſuſ-
" picion, feeble and fearful innocence is inſtantly
" ſeized and dragged to a dungeon; while the
" villain that accuſes her, under the protection of
" inviolable ſecrecy, is ſecure of eſcaping unpu-
" niſhed. Flight, the only reſource of the weak,
" is accounted a crime; and the anathema that
" purſues

"purſues the fugitive, breaks through the moſt "ſacred bonds. In him his friends no longer "know their friend, his children their father, "his ſubjects their king: he has no ſanctuary to "protect him, no refuge to ſhelter him, not even "in the boſom of nature. The hand that ſtabs "him to the heart is innocent; is the avenger of "Heaven. Every Chriſtian is, by a divine right, "the judge and executioner of the infidel fugi-"tive. Such is the law of fanaticiſm; and I "ſpare you the recital of a thouſand ſimilar atro-"cities, which conſtitute its infernal code *. No "longer fear then any obſtacle from the deteſta-"tion that the ravages in India may have rai-"ſed."

"And is the court," inquired Pizarro, "in-"fected with the ſame delirium?"——"The "court," anſwered Gonzalo, "is ſolely occupied "with the advantages to be derived from our ca-"lamities. Provided the people be made to "tremble and crouch, it is all that is there deſi-"red; and the misfortunes of India are but "lightly regarded. Formerly the grandees op-"preſſed the people. The judges were at their

* *Its infernal code.*] Conſult the inquiſitor's directory, and the extract given from it under the title of the inquiſitor's manual.

" devotion; the laws, in their preſence, were
" ſilent; and, without reſtraint, as without ſhame,
" they exerciſed the moſt crying vexations. At
" length, however, the people recovered their
" rights; the regency of Ximenes reſcued them
" from oppreſſion: he armed, diſciplined, and
" united them for their own defence; power was
" on the ſide of the laws; and the people who
" enjoyed their protection, protected them in re-
" turn againſt the attacks of the grandees, who
" were the enemies of both. Thus the ſplendor
" of the court, affording no internal ſources of
" exaction, the rapacity of the grandees directed
" their attention beyond the precincts of its im-
" mediate influence; and the hope of participa-
" ting in the plunder of the New World, hath
" rendered them the zealous partiſans of the firſt
" who engages to become the tributary of their
" haughty avarice. Every thing in this reign is
" venal; and when gold is the only ſtandard of
" worth, nothing can be obtained but by gold: of
" this I was ſolicitous to inform you. Ambition
" muſt be flattered, and the rage for wealth
" ſoothed; for all things bend to them. They
" preſide in the councils; poſſeſs the ear of the
" Prince, and are the ſoul of the court. Even
" religion is here their ſlave; and, you may
" perceive, that when ſhe attempts to reſtrain
" them,

"them, ſhe is awed into ſilence. Rome, the "ſeat of the church, has been taken and ſacked; "the Sovereign Pontiff has been thrown into "chains . . . . .—"But by infidels, without "doubt," aſked Pizarro?—"By us," replied "Gonzalo, "by this young Emperor, who him-"ſelf obtained the mournful victory. Repair "to him; ſet before him the hopes of an ex-"tenſive and rich conqueſt. He will perhaps "ſigh over the ſufferings of India; but, if theſe "ſufferings will conduce to augment his gran-"deur and his power, he will conſent to inflict "them."

Pizarro, availing himſelf of his brother's inſtructions, eaſily obtained admiſſion at court. He was preſented to the Emperor; and, in the midſt of the aſſembled council, the young Prince having granted him an audience, the warrior thus addreſſed him:

"Mighty and glorious Monarch, you now "behold one of the firſt ſoldiers, who, in the "reign of Ferdinand, bore the arms of Caſtile "to the new world. My name is Pizarro; I "was born at Truxillo, one of the meaneſt a-"mong your ſubjects; but I had the ambition "of ſurmounting the obſcurity of my birth. "On the coaſt of Carthagena and the borders of "Darien, I followed Alphonſo Ojeda, the

"moſt determined of men. In his ſchool I "learnt that there were no dangers, which cou- "rage could not vanquiſh; and I may ſay, that "he put me to the proof of every hardſhip. Next "to him, I ſerved under Vaſco of Balboa, and "conceived the hope of rivalling Columbus and "Cortes.

"You have heard the riches of America "oſtentatiouſly deſcribed; and I now apprize "you of what others have not known. Thoſe "iſlands, from the diſcovery of which Colum- "bus acquired glory, that kingdom, whoſe con- "queſt hath rendered Cortes ſo famous, are "nothing to the country that I have diſcovered, "and of which I offer you the homage. It is "the kingdom of the Incas, a people who wor- "ſhip the Sun, from whom their Kings boaſt "their deſcent, and whom they dare to call fa- "ther, on account, no doubt, of the riches "which are diffuſed by his beams through theſe "happy climates. It is a chain of mountains "of gold, extending from the equator to the "ſouthern tropic, amongſt which are interſper- "ſed the moſt delightful hills and fertile val- "lies. The ſame day preſents to your view "all the ſeaſons united; the ſame ſoil at once "produces flowers, fruits and harveſt. The "inhabitants of theſe countries are valiant, but

"ill

"ill provided with arms. It is eaſy to conquer "them, but eaſier to gain them by clemency "and gentleneſs. I have been on their coaſts, "I have entered their country; with one ſhip "and leſs than two hundred men, I would have "ſubjected people without number to your laws, "and piles of gold to your feet. The Vice-"roy of Panama, jealous of an enterprize begun "before him, and of which he partook not the "glory, recalled my companions; all but twelve "of whom left me; and with them, on a de-"ſart iſland in the midſt of tempeſts, I have ſup-"ported the rudeſt aſſaults of neceſſity. Here I "waited for a weak reinforcement; but this was "refuſed me, and I was myſelf recalled. I "ſubmitted, without renouncing the glorious "enterprize; and, to ſubdue for you the richeſt "country on earth, I aſk only the diſtinction "that Cortes enjoyed in Mexico, the honour of "commanding for you, and obeying yourſelf "alone."

Pizarro then ſubmitted to the council a narrative of his adventures, atteſted by his companions, which, though drawn up in the ſimpleſt manner, failed not to excite their wonder. But, whether the young Emperor was willing to try Pizarro ſtill further, or elſe thought that the honour he aſpired to, was too great

great for the meanneſs of his origin, ſaid: "The boldneſs of your enterprize ſeems to au-"thorize your daring ambition; but content "yourſelf with partaking of the riches you have "mentioned, and aſk no more."—"Riches," ſaid Pizarro, with an air of mortification and diſdain, "my ſailors and my ſoldiers will bring "back in abundance. Glory is the object of "my aim. Every other conſideration is beneath "my regard. If I am unworthy to govern, I "am not worthy to conquer. Name the vice-"roy to ſupplant me; I will furniſh him with "inſtructions, I will communicate to him my "plan, my projects, my diſcoveries, and every "thing but my courage . . . . . that I ſhall "need to digeſt the diſgrace of a refuſal."

This blunt and bold freedom was not offenſive to the young Monarch. "He will ſerve "me faithfully," ſaid he, "ſince he knows "not how to flatter me." The ſuit was granted; and Pizarro, from that moment, beheld a crowd of courtiers preſſing round him with their congratulations, importuning the honour of protecting his cruelties and rapine, and requeſting the infamous reward of the proferred ſupport. He ſaw the young, impetuous and ambitious, contending for the glory of following him, and partaking in his toils; he ſaw avarice

rice itſelf, ſeduced by the thirſt for gold, eagerly offering to equip a fleet, and to riſk, while it trembled at the apprehenſion of miſcarriage, the expence of an undertaking from which it expected treaſures.

Pizarro, without deſigning to impoſe on thoſe, who confided implicitly in him, by the profuſion of hopes he dealt forth, procured for himſelf the ſupport of the grandees, and the favour of the people. He had his option of the experteſt ſailors, and the moſt reſolute ſoldiers, from whom he ſelected twenty of the braveſt to command under him, in the number of whom were his brothers *. Young Davila was not forgotten: Charles condeſcended to recommend it to Pizarro to take him with him, as he touched at Hiſpaniola.

Thus, every thing correſponding to his wiſhes, in the ſame church, and on the ſame altar where Magellan ſwore obedience and allegiance to the crown of Caſtile, Pizarro, between the hands of Charles, took the ſame oath.

"Warrior," ſaid the young Prince, "here "all rights are confounded; every one, accord-"ing to his intereſts or opinions, inclines the

* *In the number of whom were his brothers.*] Ferdinand, Juan, and Gonzalo Pizarro.

"balance

" balance either to the Indians or ourſelves *. " Weary with all theſe debates, I recommend " to you two things: the one, to do your " country all the good you ſhall think is compa- " tible with juſtice, and which depends on your- " ſelf; the other, to do the Indians the leaſt " poſſible injury: for tho' I wiſh to be obeyed, I " had rather be loved." On ſaying this, he girded on him the ſword, which was to be the mark of his dignity †, and which proved but an ineffectual defence againſt baſe aſſaſſins.

In the mean time, his fleet was in the road, and his companions, collected in the port of Palos, waited only for him and a propitious gale. He came; the winds invited their departure; he embarked, weighed anchor and receded from the land amidſt the acclamations of an aſſembled people, all exhorting him to return loaded with the treaſures of America, and conſecrate the ſpoils of the temple of the Sun at the foot of the true God.

* *Every one, according to his intereſts or opinions.*] It is well known, that the court was compoſed of Flemiſh and Spaniards. The former were for the Indians, and contended that they ſhould be left free, while the latter conſulted their own intereſts, and therefore eſpouſed oppoſite principles.

† *Of his dignity.*] Marquis, governor and adelantado, or lieutenant-general.

CHAP

CHAP. XLIII.

PIZARRO, on his arrival at Hiſpaniola, was informed that Las-Caſas, having been attacked by a dangerous illneſs, was languiſhing on the brink of the grave. He went to viſit him, and found young Davila with his ſick friend, ſerving him with all the tender aſſiduity that is ſhewn by a ſon to his father.

The Recluſe felt a lively emotion at the ſight of Pizarro. On his countenance, where pain, languor, and reſignation were painted, a beam of joy gleamed forth. "My friend," ſaid he, as he ſtretched out his hand to Pizarro, "I am "going into the preſence of that God who ſent "us all into the world, to love one another, to "live in peace, to help the needy, and to com- "fort the afflicted. Behold how calm, and even "delightful is the approach of death to a ſin- "cerely good man, who can ſay to himſelf, "I have never cauſed the innocent to ſigh." "See with what confidence I can raiſe my eyes, "before they be cloſed for ever, towards Hea- "ven; with what conſolation expand my arms

"towards

"towards my father." He views me expiring, and ſays: "This man was weak, but not wicked; humanity dwelt in his boſom; he never ſaw the tears of the unfortunate, without mingling his own along with them; his hands, which are now extended to me, were ſpread in the ſame manner to relieve the diſtreſſed: towards the merciful man I will ſhew myſelf merciful." "Ah, Pizarro! may your death reſemble mine! Deſerve it by the exerciſe of juſtice and compaſſion."

His feeble and pathetic voice, together with his expreſſions, which were animated by a lively and tender piety, accompanied by looks in which the laſt glimmering of life and feeling ſeemed to ſhine, made a deep impreſſion on the heart of Pizzaro. Graſping the hand of this upright man, "O my father," ſaid he, "live, ſtill live, to ſee me practiſe the leſſons which your example has taught, and the reſolutions with which your virtues have inſpired me. Without being inveſted with authority, I could not be reſponſible to you for my conduct. This authority I now enjoy; and I hope to inſtruct my country how, without oppreſſion, to conquer."

The Recluſe enquired after his friend, the virtuous Alonzo. "He had forſaken me," replied

plied Pizarro, with concern, "and hath thrown "himſelf among the ſavages."

Good young man!" ſaid Las-Caſas, "he "always loved them; and he deſerves their "love." "But tell me, what is the diſpoſi- "tion of the new court of Spain towards "them?"——"It is divided," ſaid Pizarro; "but the party of the avaricious and tyrannical "is always the ſtrongeſt. I have ſeen, even "among the miniſters of religion, ſome devo- "ted to this cruel party. They pretend that "the cauſe of God authorizes them to recom- "mend violence; and in Spain they exerciſe it "with a rigour that I ſhuddered to behold." He then deſcribed the abominable feſtival of which he had been a ſpectator. "Monſters!" cried Las-Caſas, with ſo deep and impaſſioned an emotion of horror as made him forget his weak- neſs. "O my friend! vouchſafe your belief to "the evidence of a dying witneſs; for the fears, "the hopes, and all the concerns of mortality "vaniſh in his view who is quitting the world, "to leave behind him only his lifeleſs aſhes. "This moment I have choſen to do honour to "religion. You have already heard, and will "hereafter hear, the moſt deteſtable exceſſes "committed in the name of Heaven: pride, "ambition, luſt, the inſatiable thirſt for tyran-

" ny and depredation, have found in the ſanc-
" tuary, and even at the altar, baſe partiſans, and
" ferocious advocates. From a meanneſs diſgrace-
" ful to the dignity of the ſacred office, there are
" thoſe who combine with the powerful, the
" great, and unjuſt, to enjoy their ſupport in re-
" turn. But, my friend, God is immutable, and
" truth is like him. Neither have any need of an
" avaricious court, nor a greedy populace. The
" ſword of tyranny, and the ſceptre of injuſtice
" will be reduced to aſhes; even thrones will
" ceaſe to exiſt; but God will remain, and truth
" with him. I call this God then to witneſs, be-
" fore whom I am going to appear, that he will
" condemn in his miniſters this ſhameful policy
" to which their paſſions are enſlaved: I call him
" to witneſs that he hath delegated to no mortal
" on earth the right of compelling belief, or arm-
" ed any one with a poniard to dictate his law;
" that he who created the ſouls of Moors and of
" Indians, wants not our tortures to convert and
" reform them; and that the God who hath cau-
" ſed the Sun to riſe on theſe regions, will, when
" it ſhall appear proper to his infinite wiſdom, be-
" ſtow on them the day-ſtar of truth. As often
" then as you ſhall ſee ſacrilegious men put, into
" the hands of kings and people, ſword and fire,

" affirming,

" affirming, with eyes lifted to Heaven, that they " are innocent, and have not ſhed blood; fly " from theſe hypocritical impoſtors. If they muſt " have martyrs, let them become their own exe- " cutioners. But be cautious that you impute " not to religion the ſeverity, pride, and cruelty " of its miniſters. Peace, indulgence, and love " are its eſſence; and by theſe immutable cha- " racters it will ever be known. My friend, I " have ſaid it to kings, and to the tyrants of In- " dia; and if God ſhould prolong my days, I " would go to ſay it to this young Monarch, whoſe " underſtanding is miſled; I would aſcend the " pile, which you deſcribe as deſtined for the de- " ſtruction of ſo many miſerable victims; from " thence I would demand of this ſanguinary tribu- " nal, whether it hath taken theſe blazing fire-brands " from the altar of the Lamb? I would demand " of this King, who hath conſtituted him a judge " of the thoughts, and the tyrant of the ſoul? and " whether theſe fanatic Prieſts could confer on " him a power they poſſeſs not themſelves? They " would either deſtroy this infernal pile, or burn " me on it alive."

" Juſt man," ſaid Pizarro, " be calm; and " ſhorten not your life, which is ſo important " to us. You have done enough; and this he-

" roic zeal exceeds the duties of your ſtation."
" My ſtation! and who will do honour to reli-
" gion if its miniſter will not? who will avenge
" it of the injury it hath received from the im-
" pious invocations of a barbarous fanaticiſm?
" This is indiſputably our duty. While neither
" people nor Kings confound the intereſts of Hea-
" ven with their iniquitous projects, they may
" ſtop our complaints; but when they pretend
" that the cauſe of God impowers them to be un-
" juſt and cruel, it is our duty to cry aloud, amidſt
" ſwords and ſpears, that God diſavows the
" crimes committed in his name. Woe be to us,
" if by our ſilence we become accomplices with
" them. What then! ſhall zeal be only em-
" ployed to oppreſs and deſtroy? Shall not cha-
" rity, as well as orthodoxy, be renowned for its
" martyrs!"

Whilſt Las-Caſas, with a voice elevated by the love of mankind, was engaged in this diſcourſe with Pizarro, the night had veiled in ſhades the iſland of Hiſpaniola. Silence now reigned; all, even the ſlaves repoſed; nothing was heard but the ſound of the waves that broke on the ſhore in plaintive murmurs, which ſeemed to expreſs the complaints of nature, oppreſſed in thoſe climates.

A knock-

A knocking was heard at the door of the Recluſe. Young Davila aroſe, went to inquire the reaſon, and returned in alarm. He repaired to the bed of Las-Caſas, and hanging over it, privately aſked his advice. "Yes, let him come "in," ſaid Las-Caſas; "Pizarro is magna-"nimous; and we ſhould injure him by be-"traying diſtruſt." "You will ſee," ſaid he to him, "a Cacique, who, having, for more than "ten years, retired into the mountains of the "iſland *, maintains himſelf there an unexam-"pled inſtance of valour and goodneſs. Ha-"ving made his wild retreat inacceſſible, it is be-"come the ſecure refuge of all the iſlanders "who eſcape from their tyrants. He hath diſ-"ciplined three hundred brave men, and he re-"ſtrains them within the bounds of lawful de-"fence. Vigilant, active, full of ardor, and "not leſs prudent than intrepid, he keeps them "conſtantly on their guard, without ever per-"mitting them to begin an attack. He hath "ſeen his friends, and all his family maſſacred; "he beheld his father and his grand-father † "burnt alive; and if there falls into his hands "one of the executioners of his country, he "diſarms and ſends him back; his crueleſt ene-

* The mountains of Baoruco.

† At Xaragua, under the government of Ovando.

" my, when taken alive, is ſure of his ſafety: he " conſiders him only as a man. Happily, and " to the glory of religion, he is a Chriſtian. I had " the felicity to enlighten him; he remembers it, " and tenderly loves me. He knows that I am " ill; and you ſee the hazards he hath run to vi- " ſit me."

Bartholomew had ſcarcely finiſhed, when young Davila returned, followed by the Cacique, whom an Indian woman accompanied. Henry (this was the name of the ſavage hero) threw himſelf with eagerneſs on the bed of Las-Caſas, and a thouſand times kiſſing his hands with inexpreſſible affection: " O my father," ſaid he, " my father! again I behold you. How " much did I wiſh it! but I behold you ſuffer- " ing; and your hand burns beneath my lips! " My brethren, your children, alarmed at your " illneſs, have afflicted my ſoul. Should I be " taken, I know my fate; but I was willing to " incur the hazard for the ſake of embracing " my father. Hear me," ſaid the ſavage raiſing his head, " they tell me that the milk of " the breaſt is good for your diſorder. My con- " ſort, whom I bring to you, hath loſt her " child; ſhe hath lamented his death; ſhe hath " moiſtened with her milk the earth that co- " vers him; he requires no more. Behold her.

" Come,

"Come, my wife, and preſent to my father theſe "two ſources of health. I would give my life "for his; and if thou ſhouldeſt prolong his days, "I will cheriſh to my laſt breath the breaſt he "hath ſucked."

Bartholomew, with his eyes fixed upon Pizarro, enjoyed the impreſſion that the goodneſs of the Cacique had made on the heart of the Caſtilian; young Davila, who was preſent, ſhed tears; and the Indian woman, with celeſtial beauty, and a modeſty ſtill more captivating, caſting on Las-Caſas a look of the tendereſt reſpect, waited only for the word to preſent to his mouth her chaſte boſom.

Las-Caſas, penetrated to the ſoul, would have refuſed the offered aſſiſtance. "Ah, unkind "man!" cried the Cacique, "tell us then, if "you will die, what friend you will leave us, "You know that on yourſelf alone all our conſolation and hope repoſe. If you love us, if "you pity us, and if I myſelf am dear to you, "grant what, at the peril of my life, and ſurrounded by enemies, I am come to implore. "Approach, my wife, embrace my father; and "let thy boſom compel his mouth to draw ſuſtenance from it." On ſaying this, he took his wife in his arms, and, having made her incline over the bed of Las-Caſas: "Adieu,

"my

"my father," ſaid he, "I leave with you the "partner of my ſoul; and I deſire not to ſee her "again till ſhe ſhall have reſtored you to life "and our love."

This young and lovely Indian, on her knees, before Las-Caſas, ſaid to him in her turn, "Man "of peace and gentleneſs, what fear you? am "not I your daughter? are not you our father? "My well beloved hath often told me ſo! He "would ſhed his blood for you. I offer you "my milk. Condeſcend to draw life from this "boſom, which you have made ſo often to thrill "with delight, when the wonders of your good-"neſs have been recounted to me."

Too much affected to reject ſo tender an intreaty, and too virtuous to bluſh at an acquieſcence, the Recluſe received the benefit with the ſame innocence, with which it was offered. The young woman he permitted to ſtay; and it was to the piety of Henry and his wife, that the earth owed the happineſs of poſſeſſing a conſiderable time longer this excellent man.

"Guardian Angel of the New World," ſaid Pizarro to him, "how happy are you thus to "reign in their hearts! Others have ſubjugated "India; but you only will have conquered it by "the aſcendancy of virtue."

The

The tenderneſs which young Davila diſcovered on this occaſion was obſerved by Pizarro, to whom Las-Caſas then named him. "Son of a "father too inimical to the Indians," ſaid Pizarro, "you will ſee examples very different from "his!" He told him that the Emperor had recommended him to himſelf, and that he was deſtined to follow him. But the youth, at this moment, could not reſolve to ſeparate himſelf from Las-Caſas.

"My friend," ſaid the Recluſe to him, "it is "your duty to obey. I had much rather ſee you "obſcure, than to know you were guilty. But "the confidence with which Pizarro inſpires me "ſoftens my anxiety, and moderates my fears. I "adviſe you to follow him, and exhort you to "imitate him. Come, and ſee me again to-"morrow: I will write to my dear Alonzo; I "will trouble you with my letter; and if Pizarro "can diſcover where this good young man exiſts, "he will tranſmit it to him."

Who could have told him that, in writing this fatal letter, he was ſigning the deſtruction of the Indians!

CHAP.

CHAP. XLIV.

PIZARRO, impatient to arrive at the Iſthmus, ſet ſail with the firſt favourable breeze, and left the iſland of Hiſpaniola. His return to Panama reſtored hope and joy to his friends. No time was loſt in providing him a fleet; and, as ſoon as it was equipped, he embarked, with the reſolution of making a deſcent on thoſe coaſts he had already diſcovered. But contrary winds obliged him to ſteer for the port of Coaca, which was not far from the promontory of Palmar. Determined to depend no longer on the conſtancy of the waves, he proceeded by land along the coaſt, having ordered the fleet to join him again at the port of Tumbès.

Sands; vallies filled with thick and almoſt impenetrable woods, in which the bamboo, intertwining itſelf among ruſhes, formed an inextricable texture; cataracts; rapid rivers; a ſcorching atmoſphere; the horrors of a vaſt ſolitude, and every object the moſt terrible that nature

nature could oppoſe, were ineffectual to retard his progreſs. He continued his rout under a ſky on fire, and upon a burning ſoil. His companions, whom he encouraged with the hopes of glory and of gold, entered with him thoſe woods, where the venomous ſnakes with which they abounded had never before ſeen the footſteps of man. He ruſhed into torrents; he taught his aſſociates to croſs them by ſwimming; and thoſe whom the danger diſheartned; or their ſtrength failed them, he animated, he ſupported; he contended with the waves that overpowered them, and advancing with one hand, while he bore them up with the other, brought them all in ſafety to land. Intrepid and indefatigable, he perſiſted, and at length diſcovered cultivated fields, cottages, and hamlets inhabited by Indians. The terror that he ſpread among them ſoon carried to Quito the news of his return. But the diſtreſsful ſituation of the kingdom of the Incas had incapacitated them for placing the vallies in a poſture of defence.

Huaſcar was a priſoner within the walls of Cannara; but one of his brothers, Mango, who had retired into the defiles of the eaſtern mountains, with the relicts of his family and the ſhattered remains of his army, there meditated the hardy enterprize of returning to Cuſco, and forcing

forcing Palmore to relinquiſh it. He beheld his camp daily augmented by the refugees that were reſorting to him, which he ſuppoſed might intimidate the uſurper of the empire and oppreſſor of their King.

Thus, when an immenſe fire expands itſelf in a foreſt, the animals that inhabit it, driven from their receſſes by the rapidity of the flames which an impetuous wind diffuſes, roar as they fly to the lofty rocks, and from thence, fixing a mournful eye on the foreſt in a blaze, they ſeem to murmur forth to each other their terror and their grief.

Soon the intrepid Mango deſcends, at the head of his adherents, from the mountains of the Eaſt. Fame, which preceded him, ſpread the report of his march. Courage and hope revived in every heart; in Cuſco commotions began among the people; and a rumour privately gained ground that a revolt was threatened.

At the ſignal of an inſurrection and the approach of an army, Palmore abandoned the city. Having well ſtored the citadel which commanded it *, he there ſhut himſelf up with his troops.

Mango found the city open to receive him, and marched into it, as in triumph. Relying on

* *The citadel which commanded it.*] This citadel was built by Tupac Yupangue, the tenth Inca, from the materials collected by Yupangue his father.

the

the numerous army, with which he had inveſted the walls, he ſent a ſummons to the citadel for Palmore to ſurrender. To this the General replied, that nothing ſhould diſarm him but peace or death. They preſſed him to comply, they told him that the whole empire was in arms, that Ataliba was undone without any reſource, and that himſelf had no hope but from the mercy of Mango. "I know not what may have happened without the ramparts I defend," anſwered this generous warrior. "Ataliba is a "Man, and therefore liable to a reverſe of fortune. But, as there remain with me two "thouſand faithful ſubjects, he hath not yet "loſt his all. Were it only for myſelf, I might "then perhaps be guided by neceſſity; but while "he is alive, I depend entirely on him; and I "leave it for Mango to exerciſe his clemency "over the unfortunate, if they be mean enough "to implore it."

However, perceiving that ſome of his ſoldiers were affected by theſe menaces, he ſaid to them: "Though it ſhould be true that Ataliba has "been unfortunate, ought we to be the leſs "faithful? Should we reſemble thoſe birds that "forſake the tree, which ſome ſudden guſt hath "ſhaken? The tree is bent; it will recover: "let the ſtorm paſs on." Then ſelecting from

amongſt them a meſſenger in whoſe ability and integrity he could confide: "Repair to Atali-"ba;" ſaid he, "and acquaint him that the "garriſon of Cuſco is ſtill in our poſſeſſion; that "it is I who guard it; and that I have with "me two thouſand men determined to ſhed their "blood for him. It is thus," ſaid he, turning to his ſoldiers, who were liſtening around him, "it is thus we ſhould ſpeak to our friends in di-"ſtreſs; and the beſt of friends to a good people, "is a good King."

The King of Quito, on the firſt advice he had received of the inſurrection at Cuſco, advanced to the aſſiſtance of Palmore; and Alonzo, notwithſtanding the tears of Cora, choſe to attend him. They had paſt the plains of Loxa, ſeen the origin of the river of Amazons, and, from the ſummit of thoſe mountains which tower over the Abancaï, were tracing the progreſs of its ſtream, as it winded thro' the diſtant plains, when the meſſenger of Palmore, coming to Ataliba, informed him that Mango was marching againſt him; that Palmore, with two thouſand men, ſtill kept the citadel; and that both the general and his ſoldiers were devoted to his ſervice. Molina heard the meſſage, and inſtantly reſolved on the part to be taken. "Suffer "me," ſays he to the Inca, "to chooſe near "the

"the river a ſpot to encamp on, round which a "trench may be eaſily drawn, and where your "army may be able to reſt. Here let us avail "ourſelves of the advantage which fortune may "beſtow." He then conducted the army to the eminence that commanded the plain, himſelf traced out the camp, and, towards night, having given proper inſtructions to the meſſenger, ſent him back to Palmore.

Mango paſſed the Abancaï, advanced, and diſcovering the enemy intrenched in their camp, inſulted and challenged them to combat.

Ataliba, deeply ſtung, was highly diſſatisfied to be detained within the trenches; he thought himſelf covered with diſgrace, and complained of it to his friend. "Do you not perceive," ſaid Alonzo to him, "that theſe challenges and threats "are indications of nothing but the unſteadineſs "and imprudence of your enemies? Let the day "come that I have marked out for their defeat, "we ſhall anſwer, like men, the temerity of chil-"dren."

Two days after, when the ſplendor of morning had gilded the horizon, the King of Quito beheld, on an oppoſite hill, beyond the enemy's camp, the ſtandards of Palmore advancing. "Now, Prince," ſaid the young Spaniard, "is our time; and if Palmore does his duty, "the empire is entirely your own." He ſpoke;

and the army, on receiving the ſignal, evacuated their camp, and formed on the plain.

Alonzo reſerved a body of two thouſand men, armed with hatchets and clubs, to charge the enemy with himſelf at their head. This was the troop of Capana; and this Cacique incited his ſavages to merit the honour of fighting under Alonzo. The engagement began with arrows and ſlings, but as the combatants continued advancing, they ſoon cloſed, and a terrible conteſt enſued, in which much blood on both ſides was ſpilt.

On perceiving this, Palmore, from the ſummit of the eminence where he had halted, inſtantly charged the enemy; while, with equal ardour, the impetuous Alonzo marched on to the attack, at the head of that formidable band he had reſerved for this juncture.

Mango, between theſe unexpected and furious charges from oppoſite quarters, ſurpriſed and intimidated, could no longer diſſemble his fear. A panic prevailed through his army. All were diſperſed, all fled. The legion of the Incas alone ſtood their ground, and remained firm as a rock in the midſt of the waves that cover it with their froth. In vain was it weakened by loſſes; in vain was it overpowered by numbers; thrice was quarter offered, and thrice, with contempt,

contempt, was it indignantly refuſed. Its reſiſtance, and the carnage conſequent upon it, extinguiſhed all compaſſion in the battalions with which it was engaged. It, at length, was overborne; but not one of theſe warriors quitted their ranks; they fell on the ground where they fought; the reſt of the vanquiſhed that ſurvived, ſought for ſafety in flight, and left Ataliba, though a conqueror, overwhelmed with diſtreſs, wandering over the bloody plain, and reproaching himſelf for his conqueſt. Alas! this conqueſt, which called forth his tears, was the cloſe of his proſperity, and, as it were, the laſt ſmile, the malignant and treacherous ſmile of fortune, who was now forſaking him for ever.

This melancholy day beheld the arrival of Pizarro on the ſhore of that river which waters the fields of Tumbès.

CHAP. XLV.

NEAR the mouth of this river lay an inhoſpitable iſland *, on which Pizarro had reſolved to provide himſelf a refuge. Thither he went in canoes; for he had preceded the

* The iſland of Puna.

fleet. But this iſland was the reſidence of a bold and ferocious people. Pizarro, diſdaining to loſe any of his time, which was now precious, in ſubduing them, waited only the arrival of his fleet to return and encamp on the coaſt, before the fort of Tumbès.

A detachment of Indians, from the army of Ataliba, to the number of a thouſand, were here ſhut up in garriſon, with Orozimbo at their head. The next, under him, in command, was Telaſco. The beautiful and tender Amazilli, having a bow in her hand and a quiver on her ſhoulder, with greater dignity in her air, and lighter in the chace, than Diana herſelf is deſcribed, had followed her brother and her lover, deſerving, by her courage, to partake of their glory.

Pizarro remembering the people of Tumbès, and the reception full of benevolence, candour and humanity *, with which they had received him, was ſincerely determined to cultivate their

* *The reception full of—humanity.*] Hiſtory here attributes to the people of Tumbes an inſtance of treachery, which is in the higheſt degree improbable. *They* are recorded as having *ſacrificed to their idols three Spaniards who confided in their ſincerity.* The people of Tumbes had no idols amongſt them. They worſhipped only the Sun; but in the ſacrifices offered to him no human blood was ever ſpilt. This abſurd imputation is ſtill more ſtrongly diſproved by the manners of the people, their candour and benevolence.

eſteem

eſteem and friendſhip. With this view he aſſembled his warriors, and thus addreſſed them:

"Caſtilians, I have promiſed you riches and "glory. Of the former of theſe bleſſings you "are already ſecure, the latter depends on your- "ſelves. To thoſe of you who wiſh for gold, "I will be your ſurety that you return bur- "dened with the object of your wiſh: only "diſgrace not yourſelves with the low concern "of amaſſing it. The acquiſition of glory "is not equally certain: a great enterprize "promiſes, but does not aſſure it. He only who "hath deſerved, can obtain it: never can it be "acquired by guilt. The conquerors of Ame- "rica have done every thing that could be expec- "ted from their boldneſs and valour: But they "will ever be accounted illuſtrious plunderers. "That wonderful man to whom Spain is indebt- "ed for the New World, Columbus, diſgraced "himſelf by treachery; Cortez by a ſtill blacker "and more flagitious inſtance of perfidy; and "it was this that tarniſhed the chains with "which he fettered Montezuma. The reſt "have diſhonoured themſelves by their ſhame- "leſs exceſſes. It depends on us, my friends, "either to partake of their infamy, or, by a con- "trary conduct, to preſerve ourſelves from re- "proach, and to waſh off the ſtain they have

"caſt

"caſt on our country: on our own option the "alternative now depends. Our object is to "ſubject to the power of Spain the richeſt part "of the New World; and the two means by "which it may be effected are gentleneſs and "violence. Violence is uſeleſs; and amongſt "warlike nations, where our number is but "ſmall, it would be no leſs perilous than un-"juſt. The peril I know is nothing; but "glory is the whole; and when we ſhall have "oppreſſed, lain waſte, and changed theſe "countries into deſarts of ſlaughter and capa-"cious graves, can we venture to re-paſs the "ſea, laden with wealth and crimes, and pur-"ſued by remorſe? The execrations of one "world, the reproaches of the other, the ven-"geance of Heaven, the cries of nature and "humanity, will unite to harrow up our ſouls. "Neither grandeur nor riches can conſole us "for becoming objects of univerſal deteſtation. "The courage to ſuſtain it I do not poſſeſs; "nor have ye more of it than myſelf. Let us "ſo uſe proſperity as to have no reaſon for "bluſhing on reflection, or adverſity, as that it "may confer honour upon us. Nothing is ſo "excellent as juſtice, nor is any thing on earth "ſo juſt as the empire of virtue. By its influence "let us ſeek to prevail. What a victory, my "friends,

" friends, would it be, to gain without blood-
" ſhed or tears! What a triumph to acquire
" only by exertions of goodneſs! Gratitude
" and love would ſurrender into our hands what-
" ever theſe people poſſeſs; to conquer and cap-
" tivate them, our arms would be uſeleſs: and
" under theſe circumſtances might be con-
" verted into proper ornaments for the temples
" of that God, whoſe worſhip we are come hither
" to ſpread."

The younger part of the audience applauded the addreſs; but thoſe of the Caſtilian ſoldiers who had ſerved under Davila, and whoſe hands had been imbrued in the blood of the people on the iſthmus, drew an evil preſage from what they called the weakneſs of their general. Vincent de Valverde eſpecially, a furious and fanatical prieſt, was enraged to diſcover in the language of Pizarro the ſentiments of Las-Caſas; and knitting his atrocious brows: " They ſhall
" bend," ſaid he, within himſelf, " they ſhall
" bend beneath the yoke of the faith, or be de-
" ſtroyed."

Without hearing this odious murmur, Pizarro marched towards Tumbès, and required of the Cacique to be received as a friend. But the Cacique, ſhut up in the city, anſwered that its fate depended upon Ataliba, King of Quito, who had

had taken it under his protection; and that the fort would defend it.

This fort it was neceſſary to attack. Pizarro approached and ſurveyed it; and what was his aſtoniſhment to diſcover, from the form of the incloſure, its angles and walls of turf, which were proof againſt the thunder of his artillery, the effects of European art! "It is Molina, it is "he who hath taught the Indians to intrench "themſelves before us," ſaid Pizarro; "he hath "built for them theſe ramparts, which, perhaps, "he likewiſe defends." Impatient to gratify his curioſity, he demands a parley of the commander of the fort; and Orozimbo appears. "Spaniard, "I am a Mexican, and the nephew of Monte-"zuma. Judge whether I ought not to know "thee, and whether I can confide in thy words. "This is my laſt aſylum. It ſhall be my grave, "if it ſhould not be thine."

Mexicans in the fort of Tumbès! nothing could appear more incredible. Pizarro would not believe it. However it became neceſſary to yield to the importunities of the Caſtilians. Irritated at a reſiſtance, which they regarded as an inſult, they murmured and inſiſted on beginning an attack. Pizarro promiſed to gratify their deſire. But, with the hope of rendering it leſs bloody, he was diſpoſed to avail himſelf of the night, and

and aſſault them by ſurprize. His prudence was cenſured: it was interpreted into an injury on thoſe whoſe ſafety he appeared to conſult: his officers, and even ſoldiers, would think themſelves diſhonoured by ſuch timid precautions: it was not before theſe flocks of Indians that it was neceſſary to fear the light of day, which is ſo propitious to valour. The hero ſighed and yielded.

The attack was ſudden and reſolute. The thunders of Europe flew over the ramparts; the terrified Indians durſt not appear; and faſcines in heaps were got ready to fill up the ditch. Orozimbo, who beheld the terror that had ſeized his adherents, re-animated and encouraged them. "What! my friends," ſaid he to them, "is there any thing in this noiſe that "affrights you? Is the ſound mortal? and does "it require ſo great an effort to break the "thread of life? Theſe burning mouths, without doubt, do vomit forth death; but the "point of an arrow is as fatal, and, in the "hand of a brave man, the bow is not leſs terrible than fire. Each of you have but one "death to fear, and a thouſand to inflict: your "quivers are full. Shew yourſelves then, and "repell a troop of men, who, though bold, "are weak, and like yourſelves vulnerable and "mortal."

"mortal." Having ſaid this, a ſhower of arrows inſtantly anſwered the Caſtilians' fire. The approach to the ditch, and the ground on which the ſoldiers were advancing to fill it with faſcines, began to be dangerous. More than one arrow, and eſpecially thoſe of the Mexicans, were ſtained with blood. An avenging eye directed their flight, and ſelected its victims. Pennatez, Mendes, and Salcedo, retreated with wounds; the intrepid Lerma heard the ſhaft deſtined for his deſtruction whiz through his plume. The brave Peraltez was aſtoniſhed to find the rapid weapon had penetrated his thick ſhield, and grazed on his boſom. The nervous arm of Telaſco had diſcharged it; but, blunted by the iron, it fell without force at the feet of the haughty Spaniard.

Bénalcaſar, who was one of the ſcourges of theſe countries, mounted on a fiery ſteed, ſtimulated the ardour of the ſoldiers. An arrow, aimed by the hand of Orozimbo, ſtruck his horſe on the flank. The beaſt became unmanageable, reared up, beat the air with his feet, fell backward, and trampled upon his rider, who lay extended on the ſand. Orozimbo, on ſeeing him fall, exclaimed with a ſhout of joy: "Shades "of Montezuma and Guatimozin! Shade of "my father! Shades of my friends! receive "this

"this tribute, this weak tribute of vengeance. "I ſhall not die without having cauſed one of "our tyrants to pour forth his blood and his "ſoul!" He was deceived: the looſe ſand yielded under the weight of the horſe, and the Caſtilian, covered by it, aroſe from his fall more furious, implacable, and thirſty for blood.

The fatal lead, which carried within the walls unavoidable havoc, but too well avenged Pizarro, without affording him any conſolation. He deeply felt the moſt inconſiderable loſs, and was ſorry to ſee the Indians inured to war and familiarized to the report and fire of thoſe arms, which had every where ſpread terror through the New World. The only choice remaining was, either to render them ſtill more intrepid by yielding to their reſiſtance, or, to ſtake all hopes of ſucceſs on the hazard of a moment. The ditch was filled up ſo as to afford them a paſſage, and it was in their power to ſcale the fort. Pizarro reſolved to attempt it, and gave the proper orders. The fire was inſtantly redoubled to cover the ſcalade.

Orozimbo loſt not his courage. He forbade his Indians to expoſe themſelves to the fire. "Imitate us," ſaid he: "Telaſco, my friends, "and I, will give you an example." The ſole precaution he took was to remove his ſiſter from

the place of attack. She extending her arms, conjured him with tears that he would permit her to be near him.

Then arming themſelves with hatchets and maſſive clubs, and bending to conceal themſelves, they waited the approach of their boldeſt aſſailants.

Three appeared at once, Moſcoſo, Alvara, and Ferdinand, the younger brother of Pizarro. They mounted with a ſword in one hand, in the other a ſhield, and in their eyes the moſt determined courage.

Telaſco attacked Moſcoſo, and with a blow of his club cruſhing the helmet which the Spaniard wore to defend his head, forced him backwards from the top of the walls. He fell like a thunderbolt on the ſoldiers behind him, and rolled down on ther ſhields.

Ferdinand Pizarro was preparing to leap from the ladder to the rampart; but ſtill tottering on a ſlender ſupport, he could neither ward off the ſtrokes of an opponent, nor be certain of his own. Orozimbo having graſped him by that arm in which he held his ſword, wrenched it from him, and drew him towards himſelf. Ferdinand ſtill ſtruggled, but was brought to the ground. His conqueror ſpared his life, and the ſoldier that ſucceeded him received the fatal ſtroke in his ſtead.

Alvara,

Alvara, at the inſtant he ſeized on the wall to ſurmount it, felt the murderous hatchet deſcend upon his caſque, and, glancing from thence, enter the arm by which he preſerved his hold. He fell down covered with blood; and his ſoldiers, ſeeing the liſted clubs ready to fall upon their heads, no longer dared, by following his example, to expoſe themſelves to inevitable death.

Pizarro thought he had loſt the moſt affectionate, amiable, and virtuous of his brothers; but he reſtrained the emotions of grief. He ſaw the conſternation of thoſe with whoſe advice he had too readily complied, but forbearing to recriminate, he deſiſted from ſtorming the fort.

The firſt care of Orozimbo, after the enemy had retired into their camp, was to burn the vaſt heap of faſcines with which they had filled up the ditch of the rampart; and as the ſmoke and flames roſe above the walls: "Come," ſaid he to young Pizarro, "and behold this pile. If I "ſhould throw you into it alive, and with you "burn all your companions, their fathers, their "children, and their wives, I ſhould not have "requited to you all the evils that your nation "hath inflicted on us. . . . . Go then, go back, "and tell theſe barbarians that the nephews of

"Montezuma having at their feet a fire, and in "their hands a Caſtilian. . . . . Go, I tell you, "without delay; for methinks I hear the ſhade "of Guatimozin repine."

Ferdinand Pizarro departed with a dejected heart, not daring to avow, even to himſelf, that he was indebted for his life to the clemency of an Indian, and that Indian the nephew of Montezuma! On the plain that ſeparated the camp of the Spaniards from the fort of Tumbès, he found an old man weltering in his blood on the ſand. The aged ſufferer, ſtill alive, ſtretched out his arms towards the youth to implore his aſſiſtance. Pizarro approached him. The Indian, fixing upon him his dying eyes, ſhewed him his wounded ſide, and made one ſign towards the ſhore and another towards Heaven, as if to point out the crime and the avenger.

The warrior, commiſerating his misfortune, performed for him every office of humanity; he ſtaunched the blood of his wound; and helping him to riſe and ſupport himſelf, was deſirous of conducting him to the camp. The old man trembled with horror, and conjured him, by kiſſing his hands, to lead him the oppoſite way. "No," ſaid he; "it is that way they are gone." —"Who?" aſked Pizarro.—"The murderers," ſaid the old man. "They were cloathed like "you;

"you; they reſemble you..... No, forgive "me, I would not do you wrong: you are as "good as they are wicked. They came from the "fort and went towards the ſhore; I was croſſing "the plain; I did them no injury. One of "them eyed me with a fierce and threatening "look. I trembled; I ſaluted him to ſoften his "ferocity, and he, drawing his ſword, plunged "it into my ſide."

"Ah! barbarians!" cried the young man, in a tone expreſſive of horror. "And I at the "moment when they were aſſaſſinating you!" ..... He could add no more: ſighs ſtopt his voice. He embraced the old Indian, and bathed him with his tears. "Ah! if you knew," replied he, "how much I deteſt their crime! how "much I ought to abhor it! Good old man, "thy days ſhall be dear to me: I will not deſert "thee. Tell me, where ſhall I conduct thee? —"To the village you ſee yonder," ſaid the Indian. "It is there that my children expect me. "In the name of your father, help me to "drag myſelf on towards my hut: all I aſk of "Heaven is once more to ſee my children, and "expire in their arms." This happineſs he did not enjoy. Having advanced but a few ſteps, his knees tottered under him and he felt a univerſal languor. Sinking back on the breaſt of Pizarro

and fixing his eyes on thoſe of his ſupporter, he tenderly preſſed his hand; after looking ſtedfaſtly on Heaven, and caſting a tender and dying glance towards his village, he breathed his laſt.

Ferdinand, overwhelmed with diſtreſs, returned to the Spaniſh camp. The council was aſſembled in the tent of the general; and great was the tranſport of the hero at the ſight of his brother, a brother whom he tenderly loved, and whom he thought for ever loſt! He aroſe and embraced him. The two other warriors of the ſame blood diſcovered equal emotions of joy; the whole Council participated in their happineſs, and rejoiced at his return. They inquired into the circumſtances of his abſence. He informed them of every thing that had paſſed, of the valour of the Mexicans, the clemency of their Chief, and his diſcovery of the old man. The recital, on which he dilated with pleaſure, yielded him conſolation; his emotion expreſſed itſelf by tears, which he did not attempt to ſuppreſs. "O my brother!" ſaid he, at length, to the general, "it is we who teach the ſavages to "be cruel and perfidious; but they cannot "teach us to be generous and good! What a "diſgrace to us! I demand vengeance for the "murder of this Indian; I demand it in the "name

"name of Heaven and humanity. Diſcover "who amongſt us is baſe and barbarous enough "to have plunged his ſword into the breaſt of a "peaceful, feeble, and fearful old man."

There were in the council unfeeling men, who ſaid in a low voice, accompanied with a ſmile, that young Pizarro ſet a great value on his life, ſince he was ſo grateful to them for condeſcending to leave it. He obſerved the ſmile of contempt, and was ſtung by it; but the general, reſtraining his impetuoſity, bade him take his ſeat at the board.

The great object of the Caſtilians was to huſband their forces. They were too few in number to hazard a diminution from a ſecond onſet. It was neceſſary therefore to leave behind them the city and fort of Tumbès, to ſeek a more acceſſible landing-place on another part of the coaſt, or to reduce to the laſt extremities, by a long ſiege, the defenders of this.

The propoſition of a ſiege appeared the wiſeſt and moſt glorious: it obtained a general ſuffrage. The general alone, collected in himſelf, and profoundly occupied, ſeemed ſtill to be irreſolute. He raiſed his head, which, for a long time, had reſted upon both his hands, with majeſty, and ſlowly looking round the aſſembly: "Caſtilians," ſaid he, "I was deſirous, by my deference to

"your

" your opinion, to give you a proof of my eſteem. " I permitted the fort to be ſtormed; the event " hath ſhewn the imprudence of the meaſure. " Ye are deſirous of beſieging theſe walls, ye " wiſh it, and I again conſent. But among peo- " ple, who, without us, and remote from us, lived " in peace on theſe ſhores, which, whatever may " be ſaid, we have invaded by an unjuſt war, ex- " pect not that I ſhall reduce a whole city to un- " dergo the laſt extremities of ſcarcity and famine. " I wiſh to intimidate them. But if this people " have the fortitude to perſevere, I ſhall never have " the cruelty to compel them. When in battle I " hazard and defend my own life and the lives of " my friends, the danger to which I expoſe myſelf " compenſates the evil I do; and I may be forgi- " ven. But to be inhuman where there is no dan- " ger! to behold a famiſhed multitude languiſh- " ing before one's eyes, infants expiring on the " boſoms of their mothers, and old men in the " arms of their ſons! To behold them tearing " in pieces and devouring each other in the ecſta- " cies of grief, rage and deſpair! I am firmly re- " ſolved againſt it, and of this I forewarn you. " Short of this, whatever war may authorize—I " will do."

CHAP.

CHAP. XLVI.

THE preſage of Pizarro was ſoon accompliſhed. The treaſures of harveſt being collected into the villages, ſcarcity prevailed within the walls of the city. To facilitate the acceſs of proviſions, it was neceſſary to attack and force the lines of the enemy. Orozimbo undertook the command of theſe ſallies; and neither his ſiſter nor his friend would remain behind him.

The Spaniards, having ſurrounded the whole fort, were too much weakened by the extent of their line, and being ſurpriſed by an attack in the night, were ſoon overpowered by ſuperior numbers. The ſucceſs of the firſt ſally revived, for ſome time, the hopes of the beſieged; but the ſecond proved fatal to the heroes of Mexico: both loſt it in the object moſt dear to their hearts.

The charge had been ſo well conducted, that the lines were broken, a ſupply was introduced into the fort, and the Indians had retired without being

being purſued. In this retreat Amazilli thought ſhe ſaw, by the glimmering light of the moon, a young Indian ſtruggling between two Spaniards. They had taken him, and were dragging him away. Telaſco was not with her, and the young man appeared to reſemble him. She approached them, and her fears were confirmed. Diſtracted, ſhe called out for help, but without being heard. There was no one but herſelf to defend him. She determined to ſave him, or periſh. Her bow was extended. But will ſhe pierce the boſom of an enemy, or the heart of her lover? Her eye is certain, but her hand trembles, and her fear increaſes the danger. Twice ſhe takes her aim, and twice her lover preſents himſelf before the arrow juſt ready to fly. A ſudden chillneſs ſeizes her; her trembling knees bend beneath her; her bow, which ſhe has not the ſtrength to unſtring, falls from her hands. Nature and love at length call forth one of thoſe efforts which are reſerved for extreme dangers. She, availing herſelf of the moment when one of the Spaniards preſſed on the Mexican with his ſhield, diſcharged her arrow. Beneath its ſtroke the ſoldier fell, and that arm of Telaſco which wielded the hatchet was immediately diſengaged. The other enemy experienced its terrible exertion. Telaſco delivered,

as by a prodigy, haſtens to join his companions, who were now re-entering the walls. . . . But, unhappy man, what doſt thou? Thou leaveſt thy miſtreſs in the power of thine enemies.

No ſooner was the arrow flown, and Amazilli had beheld her lover at liberty, and flying, than her ſtrength forſook her, and left her unable to follow. The terror ariſing from thoſe reflections which are conſequent upon imminent dangers, aud that continues to occupy the mind when the peril itſelf is paſſed, preſerved its aſcendancy over her heart, which had now loſt all its courage, and exerted ſo powerful an influence, that ſhe ſunk lifeleſs on the ground. In this condition ſhe for ſome time lay. On opening her eyes ſhe beheld herſelf ſurrounded by Caſtilian ſoldiers, whom the noiſe of the conflict had brought together on the place. They found her motionleſs, and beheld her with pity, each eagerly endeavouring to recal her to life. Her beauty, re-animating, impreſſed their hearts with a tender reſpect. Savage hearts! beauty, at leaſt, can ſoften your ferocity: it is one right over you that nature hath not loſt.

The young and brave Mendoza, mounted on a haughty courſer, was dazzled at the charms of the heroine, whom he met ſurrounded by ſoldiers.

ſoldiers. The circlet of feathers that crowned her head, her quiver of gold, ſuſpended by a chain of emeralds, the valuable preſent of Ataliba, the tiſſue that encircled her waiſt, and confined the folds of her floating robe, but eſpecially the ſuperior dignity of her air and deportment, betrayed her, and indicated her illuſtrious rank.

"Young beauty," ſaid Mendoza, "by what "misfortune or imprudence have you fallen into "our hands?"—"Vengeance and love," ſaid ſhe, "the two paſſions that actuate my heart." —"Are you the daughter, or the wife, of the "King of Tumbès?"—"Neither," ſaid ſhe, "I was born in other climates. Theſe walls "have been my refuge. That liberty, which is "raviſhed from me, was my only bleſſing."—— "It ſhall be reſtored to you," ſaid Mendoza; "deign to confide in me." And, taking her behind him on his horſe, he carried her to the camp of Pizarro.

The morning diffuſed its light; and Pizarro, in the midſt of the camp, was enquiring the events of the night. Mendoza arrived, and preſented to him his lovely priſoner. The hero received her with that noble, modeſt, and conſolatory goodneſs to which the unfortunate are entitled,

entitled, and which are the conſtant tribute to weakneſs and innocence protected by beauty.

But fortune, malignant, purſued Amazilli. By means of young Ferdinand Pizarro, who had ſeen her in the fort of Tumbes, ſhe was immediately diſcovered. "Ah, my brother!" cried he, "it is herſelf, it is the ſiſter of the valiant "Cacique, of the generous Mexican, who "ſaved my life and gave me my freedom. I "conjure you, requite the obligation." Pizarro was diſpoſed to ſend her back, but the majority of the Spaniards vociferouſly complained. "Is "it neceſſary with Mexicans to pique ourſelves "on ſuch frivolous ceremonies and nice atten-"tions? Does a Spaniard hope to conciliate "their friendſhip? He has in his hands the cer-"tain, and perhaps the only means of obliging "them to ſurrender; and he will ſuffer it to "eſcape him! Had he rather behold two hundred "men committed to his care, totally unprovided "of every ſupply on an hoſtile ſhore, and with-"out any ſhelter, periſh around theſe ramparts, "either by fatigue, miſery, or the weapons of "ſavages? Was it his deſign to ſacrifice "them?"

The general would have deſpiſed theſe complaints, had not this exchange of priſoners ſo nearly concerned him. But his perſonal intereſt would have rendered odious this inſtance of ju-

tice; and he was ſolicitous to place himſelf above the reach of ſuſpicion. He ordered Valverde, the only man who, on account of his profeſſion, could with propriety be appointed to guard the priſoner, to be called; and confided her to his care, with inſtructions to carry her on board the ſhip. The ſame day, he informed the commander of the fort, that his ſiſter was a priſoner; and that he had aſſigned her his ſhip for an aſylum; that every attention ſhould be ſhewn her, and every convenience provided, which could alleviate the misfortune of captivity; but that a duty, more ſacred than gratitude, forbade him to reſtore her, unleſs that by renouncing a reſiſtance it would be uſeleſs to protract, he would admit them into the fort.

The Mexican heroes, on diſcovering the abſence of Amazilli, had uttered cries of grief and rage. They every where ſought her with their eyes; they called her: they ran through the whole incloſure of the rampart that ſeparated them from her, ready to encounter a thouſand deaths, wherever they might hear her lamentations. Her lover dared even to leave the fort and ſeek her in the country. At length, in deſpair, and ſuppoſing her loſt, they were weeping together, when the meſſenger of Pizarro informed them ſhe was alive. The firſt emotion

of

of their hearts was devoted to joy; but their rapture was deluſive, and ſoon followed by grief.

Amazilli in ſlavery, at the mercy of the Spaniards, without the poſſibility of being delivered, but on condition of ſurrendering the fort! was a ſpecies of misfortune not leſs diſtreſsful than death itſelf. But indignation having re-animated the heart of Orozimbo with courage, he greatly replied, that his ſiſter was very dear to him, but that he would not for her ſake betray a King, who was his benefactor, his hoſt, and his friend; that he thanked the Chief of the Caſtilians for the attention he ſhewed to a captive Princeſs; but that he thought, by ſending back his brother, he had given a more generous example.

When Pizarro heard the anſwer of Orozimbo, he ſternly eyed the Caſtilians that ſurrounded him, and ſaid to them: "Behold how far ſupe-"rior theſe men are to us, and in compariſon "of them, how vile, wicked, and baſe we ap-"pear? Learn to bluſh at your own, and imi-"tate their conduct." From that moment he reſolved to reſtore Amazilli, and to charge Ferdinand himſelf with the care of re-conducting her. As the day, however, was declining, he deferred the execution of his deſign till the next.

In the mean time, the hypocritical villain, to whoſe care ſhe had been committed, finding himſelf alone with her, felt the deadlieſt poiſon of love rankle in his veins. He approached her, at firſt, under the pretence of offering conſolation. "My daughter," ſaid he, "moderate your "grief. Heaven watches over you; and both "the aſylum it hath provided, and the guardian "it hath choſen you, are evident marks of its "goodneſs. Under this plain and modeſt habit "know you who I am, and all that I can do for "you? I am as you ſee unarmed, but thoſe who "bear arms are ſubject to my will. I have "only to command them to ſhed blood, and "blood will be ſpilt. I have only to bid the "ſword deſiſt, and it returns to its ſcabbard. "Nations, armies, Kings themſelves are ſubject "to my equals, and we rule over men as over "babes."

Amazilli, who had remembered prieſts in Mexico, perceived that Valverde exerciſed this dreadful function. "You are then," ſaid ſhe, "one of the interpreters of the Gods?—"Of "the Gods!" replied Valverde; "know, there "is but one: and it is he whom I ſerve. All "tremble before him; and he hath committed "into my hands his power. My ſpirit is his; "my voice is his organ; I ſpeak, and it is he "who

" who is heard; it is his will that I declare; and " his will changes when, and how, I pleaſe: for " he hears me; and my prayer either provokes " or appeaſes him, according to my pleaſure."

" Will, then," ſaid ſhe, " that your God be " juſt, and that he ceaſe to purſue the miſerable, " who, having never known him, cannot poſſibly " have offended him."

" Your calamity, I acknowledge, is deſer- " ving of pity," ſaid Valverde; " but, without " a prodigy, you can ſcarcely avoid the precipice " on which I now ſee you. You are known to " be the ſiſter of the warrior who defends theſe " walls: it has been propoſed to him to ſurren- " der them: your ranſom is the price. If he " loves you enough to comply with this diſgrace- " ful preſcription, you will be united again, but " in ſhame and in ſlavery: I ſay in ſhame, my " daughter; for he muſt be regarded as baſe and " perfidious, if, for your ſake, he violates his " truſt."

Amazilli ſhuddered with terror while he ſpoke. " Well, then," replies he, " do you think if there " ſhould come from Heaven a beneficent being, " who would protect you beneath the ſhadow of " his wings, ſtrike your enemies with confuſion " and terror, and reſcue you out of their hands, " that you ought to deſpiſe his care, and refuſe

" his aſſiſtance?"—"And who," aſked ſhe, " will " be this propitious being?——" I," anſwered Valverde.—" Ah!" ſaid ſhe, " we ſhall reſpect " our deliverer as a God." " It depends on your- " ſelf alone, for me to deliver you," replied the villain; " and it is you that may induce me to " it."—" Alas! by what means?"—" Think on " the happy moment when the brother, whom " you ſo ardently love, when the lover, who is ſtill " ſo much dearer to your heart, beholding your " return, ſhall ruſh forward to meet your em- " braces."—" I ſhould be overcome with tranſ- " port."—" I believe you; and my imagination, " with pleaſure, contemplates the happy inter- " view. Amiable maid! methinks I ſee you " flying to their boſoms, and beſtowing upon " them the moſt tender careſſes; your charms " revive, and ſhine forth with an heavenly " ſplendor; your heart palpitates, your breaſt " throbs; a ſparkling radiance ſits trembling " on the tear of rapture that is ready to ſtream " from your eye. Yes, I will reſtore to you " this lover, this happy lover. Enjoy the fore- " taſte of thoſe delights that I ſhall procure " you, and let me participate in them, by rea- " liſing the illuſion I have raiſed in your mind. " Imagine you behold him inviting you, con- " templating your charms, and fondly break-

" ing

" ing forth in the tendereſt expreſſions of joy " and of love. Throw yourſelf into his arms, " and partake the diſorder, the intoxication, and " the ecſtaſy with which you inſpire him." At theſe words, with eyes inflamed, he ſprung ..... She eſcaped, and ſnatching up her bow, which ſhe armed with an arrow, cried out, with an air in which indignation was blended with terror: " Forbear! falſe and barbarous man, " forbear! I underſtand your deſign, I perceive " the price at which you rate your baſe com- " paſſion. I am weak, a captive, and in the " power of my oppreſſors; but in my weakneſs " I have one reſource to ſupport me. This re- " ſource, which places me beyond the reach of " tyrants, is a generous contempt of death."

" Imprudent woman!" replied Valverde, " ſee " you nothing to be dreaded but death? what " think you of a perpetual ſlavery? the misfor- " tune of beholding no more the objects moſt " dear to your heart? and the ſtill more ter- " rible evil of dragging into chains your brother " and your lover? .... Tremble, and fall on " your knees to appeaſe my reſentment; or the " fugitives from a country that we have reduced " to aſhes, thy brother, thy lover and thyſelf, " ye all in your turns ſhall undergo the fate of " your Kings."

" Go,"

"Go," ſaid ſhe with horror, "were the "burning gridiron before me on which Gua- "timozin was laid, I would rather throw "myſelf upon it alive, than at the feet of the "villain I abhor." On ſaying theſe words ſhe extended her bow to pierce his heart. Valverde, confounded, but remorſeleſs, retired full of rage.

Left to herſelf, the unhappy maid gave way to the impulſe of her grief. To find herſelf ſeparated for ever from her brother and her lover, or to behold them ſurrender themſelves to the murderers of their family and the deſtroyers of their country! they could never reſolve to do it; and tho' they could, would they on this account experience the more mercy? Their enemies have already been taught to fear them, and will take care not to leave Mexico ſuch formidable avengers.

In the ſilence of the night, theſe reflections, animated by the image of her country, which obtruded itſelf on her view, all covered with blood, ſo violently agitated her mind, that ſhe would have ſuffered a thouſand deaths, rather than, for her deliverance, they ſhould ſubmit to the terms which the Caſtilians had propoſed.

But it was not by ſubmiſſion, that Orozimbo and Telaſco meditated her reſcue. To chooſe a dark

dark night, ſally forth from the ramparts, attack the enemy's camp, periſh together, or penetrate to the ſhip where Amazilli was confined, and bear her away; was the bold deſign they had formed in their deſpair.

Both burned with impatience till morning ſhould ſhine on the port. They hoped that Amazilli would appear on the ſtern, where, from the top of the ramparts, they might be able to diſtinguiſh her. Their expectation was not diſappointed.

Amazilli, with a heart ſtill perplexed by the terrors of the night, was waiting on the ſtern before the dawn, till the ſplendor of morning ſhould appear, and in the mean time her eyes, thro' the glimmering of twilight were fatigued with attempting to deſcry the fort, which hung over the ſea. At firſt ſhe thought it begun to be perceptible; at length ſhe ſaw it diſtinctly, and on the wall ſhe diſcovered two men, whom her heart aſſured her were her brother and her lover. "They "are ſeeking me with their eyes," ſaid ſhe, "they "cannot live without me. I ſhall render them "weak and puſilanimous, perfidious towards "their country, and faithleſs towards a king, "their benefactor and friend. No, I will not ſo "fatally over-value my life; if it be to them a

"ſhameful

"ſhameful chain, I will free them from it." Then, to fix on her their attention, ſhe took off her girdle, and waved it in the air. One of them, her faithful Telaſco, anſwered her ſignal by waving in return the circlet of feathers that crowned his head; and when ſhe was well aſſured that their eyes were rivetted on her, attentive to all her motions; ſhe drew an arrow from her quiver, raiſed her arm, and ſaid, but without the hopes of being heard: "Adieu, my brother, adieu, unhap-"py Telaſco. Lament my fate, but, above all, "avenge me, avenge Mexico." At theſe words ſhe pierced her boſom, and threw herſelf into the ſea.

"O Heaven! my ſiſter! Amazilli!... It is "over. I ſaw her ſtrike the fatal blow and "fall. I beheld," cried Orozimbo, "the waves "open to receive her and cloſe again upon "her. My ſiſter, my dear Amazilli, is no "more. She is no more! Yet we, and the "monſters who have compelled her to deſtroy "herſelf ſtill live!.... Ah! we will avenge "her. My brother! my friend! Yes, we will "avenge her. It is the laſt hope of our ſouls." Having thus ſpoken, pale, trembling, ſuffocated with ſobs, and overwhelmed with tears, they embraced each other, fell together, rolled on the duſt, and vented their grief in groans

which

which were interrupted at intervals by a dreadful ſilence. At length, recovering their fortitude, they concerted meaſures for ſallying forth on the following night, and carrying into the enemies camp terror, carnage and death. Alas! how vain a project! before the evening arrived fortune had changed the fate of every thing on that coaſt.

They ſaw the people from the vallies of Ica, Piſco and Acari, running in crowds to meet the Spaniards, offering them homage, and ſoliciting them to repair to the port of Rimac, on thoſe ſhores, where ſoon after they built the City of Kings. This ſudden revolution was the work of Mango. Pizarro availed himſelf of it with joy: he re-imbarked with his men; and the Mexicans, furious to behold the Caſtilians eſcaping from their vengeance, gloomily reſumed the road from the tops of the mountains through the fields of Tumibamba.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLVII.

ATALIBA, who, after his victory, had heard of the arrival of the Spaniards, allowed his army to repoſe on the banks of the river Zamora; and at this time, the Sun, in the northern tropic, having attained that limit, which an invariable law hath appointed, and which he never exceeds, in a ſpacious plain, and in the midſt of an extenſive camp, ſaw his feſtival ſolemnized. The people there aſſembled in crowds; the court of the Inca repaired hither from the palace of Riobamba, where the Prince had left it; the deareſt of his wives, the lovely and tender Aciloè, came with it; her eyes were yet ſtreaming with tears, called forth by the memory of her ſon, and which time had been unable to abſorb Cora, by whoſe misfortunes the Princeſs had been ſenſibly touched, and who had been received at her court, accompanied her to the feaſt. She met again her Alonzo with tranſport, proud to diſplay the effects of their mutual paſſion.

All

All the feſtivals of the Sun had ſome object of public morality in view. This, more ſolemn and ſtriking than the reſt, was the feſtival of death. What diſtinguiſhed it from thoſe already deſcribed was a hymn which was ſung in the celebration. The Pontiff, with a ſerene air, and wearing on his brow a myſterious tranquillity, began the funeral ſtanzas; the Incas reſponded, and the people, liſtening in ſilence, muſed on death.

"Man, deſtined to labour, to ſuffering and "to ſorrow, comfort thyſelf, for thou art mor- "tal. In the morning thou ariſeſt to feel thy "wants; in the evening, thou lieſt down, weary "and dejected with toil. Comfort thyſelf, for "death awaits thee, and in his boſom is repoſe.

"Thou ſeeſt a bark that has been toſſed by the "ſtorm re enter the peaceful harbour, and reſt "ſecure in its port. This ocean, inceſſantly vexed "by tempeſts, is life; the peaceful and ſafe har- "bour that no ſtorms can moleſt is the grave.

"Thou beholdeſt the fearful infant, whom "his mother hath left at a diſtance, to make him "put forth his ſtrength. He haſtens towards "her with tottering ſteps, holding out his "weak arms; he approaches her, ruſhes into "her boſom, and feels no longer his weakneſs. "Such a child is man; and ſuch a tender mo- "ther is nature, which, in a moment like this, "the vulgar call death."

"Frail man, during thy life thou art the ſlave "of neceſſity, the ſport of accidents. Death will "break thy bonds: thou ſhalt be free; and to "thee there will exiſt thro' immenſity only thy-"ſelf and the God that formed thee.

"Let the God, which animates the world but "breathe; it is life. Let him reſume that breath; "it is death. What is there ſurpriſing in the "exility of a breath that paſſes into thy boſom, "as the wind paſſes thro' a tree? Is the foliage "aſtoniſhed at a want of power to retain it?

"Thou haſt ſeen thine equal expire; his con-"vulſions have filled thee with fear; and thoſe "efforts of grief, at the moment of relinquiſhing "his prey, thou attributeſt to death. Death is "exempt from ſuffering; and on the brink of the "grave is a bulwark, where the remaining evils "of life are accumulated; but beyond it is an e-"ternal calm.

"Deemeſt thou that time is ſlow in its pro-"greſs? It is becauſe time conducteth to death, "and death is the term towards which nature, "diſquiet, and impatient of life, is tending. "What man is there that does not wiſh for to-"morrow? It is, becauſe that to-day is life, and "to-morrow is death.

"Old age which diſſolves all the ties of the "ſoul, the unavoidable alternative of decrepi-"tude or mortality, the ſoother of ſlumber,

"which

"which is only the forgetfulneſs of one's ſelf, "the diſguſt, the oppreſſive conſciouſneſs of a "languid and tedious exiſtence, all diſpoſe, invite "and habituate us to death.

"Whence then, O man, ariſes this repug- "nance to a bleſſing towards which thou art "led, by an invincible proclivity? It is that "thou thinkeſt thyſelf wiſer than nature, better "than the God that gave thee exiſtence; it is "that thou takeſt the darkneſs of futurity for an "unfathomable abyſs.

"And who would ſuffer life if the exit were "leſs terrible? Nature intimidates us to retain "us in it. It is an immenſe gulph, which ſhe "hath hollowed out on the confines of being and "death, to prevent our deſertion.

"Were there a God ſo inexorable as to will "that man ſhould be driven to deſpair, he would "have condemned him never to die. Diſguſt "and diſtreſs would afflict his ſoul; the neceſſity "of living, like a thorn armed with innumerable "points, would inceſſantly wound his heart. The "ſign of reconciliation between Heaven and "man, is death.

"There is but one means of rendering life "more valuable than death: that is, to live for "our country, faithful to its worſhip and its "laws, conducive to its proſperity, and worthy

" of its gratitude; to be able to ſay, when dying: " I have not only lived for it; it ſhall have my " laſt ſigh."

Thus ſung the offspring of the Sun; and theſe ſongs, which reſounded in the ſouls of the young warriors, raiſed them above themſelves. But the women and the children, regarding their huſbands and fathers with eyes which expreſſed both tenderneſs and terror, ſeemed to conjure the continuance of their love, or at leaſt, that they would ſtill bear the evils of life, and oppoſe the ſpontaneous emotions of nature, to this enthuſiaſm that prompted them to ſet death at defiance.

The Monarch, after the hymn was concluded, having pronounced an eulogy, upon the brave Indians, according to their tribes, who had fallen in his defence: " We have lamented over " the dead," reſumed he; " our mourning is " concluded. Let us leave the paſt, which is " now no more; and think only on the future, " which, to us, is a new being. Plunderers, " and the ſcourges of all countries wherever " they come, are arrived at Tumbès. I think " I have placed that city in a ſituation to with- " ſtand them. It is defended by heroes; but " this is not ſufficient: to-morrow I fly to their " relief. People, it is there that dangers, wor-

" thy

"thy of the moſt intrepid courage, invite us. "Ye will there behold ſwift animals bearing "men to battle; ye will there ſee the image of "the terrible Illapa * in the arms of the plun-"derers. They poſſeſs the art of giving death "the moſt formidable appearance. But it is no "more than death; and ye have heard if death "ſhould be feared. Theſe robbers, however, are "mortal like us; and ſo ſmall is their number, "that if ye ſurround them, they will be in the "midſt of you, like leaves in a whirlwind. Be-"hold," continues he, pointing to Alonzo, "one "who knows how to conquer them; he will "command you."

CHAP. XLVIII.

THUS ſpake Ataliba, and inſpired them with his courage. But towards the cloſe of day he beheld the arrival of the Mexican warriors to his camp, who acquainted him with the circumſtances of their diſgrace. They informed him that Mango, reduced to deſpair, had pretended, and propagated among the Indians the report of

* See the laſt note of the *ſecond* chapter.

an oracle delivered by the King his father, * who, when he was dying, foretold the arrival of the Caſtilians, and recommended to his people to meet and adore them; that to ſupport this opinion, Mango had himſelf ſet the example, by ſending an ambaſſy to the Caſtilian general, imploring his aid in favour of the King of Cuſco, againſt the uſurper of the throne of the Incas, the deſtroyer of their race, the oppreſſor of the Inca his brother, who was a priſoner within the walls of Cannara.

The ſame news, which arrived from all quarters at the ſame time, rapidly ſpread thro' the army. Anxiety and terror prevailed in every mind, when the Cacique of Rimac came to deliver to the Inca the letters with which the Spaniſh general had diſpatched him, for Alonzo Pizarro, when he ſent him the letter of Las-Caſas wrote to him to this effect:

"My dear Molina, if you love your country, "now is the moment to ſave it from the com- "miſſion of crimes. If you love the Indians, "this is the moment to ſave them from miſery. "You know not the friend you have abandoned. "What hath diſtreſſed you, is ſtill more diſtreſ- "ſing to me. But without rank to make me "reſpectable, and authority to exact obedience, "I was compelled to overlook what I was un-

* Huaina Capac.

able

"able to puniſh. I have ſince made a voyage "to Spain, and am, at length, returned with the "plenary power of our invincible Monarch. "This young Prince is a lover of mankind. "He requires that the Indians ſhall be treated "with lenity and indulgence. He hath injoined "me to watch over them with the tender ſoli-"citude of a father. Happy ſhall I be to ful-"fil his deſigns! Be aſſured my inclination "coincides with my duty. But you well know "how much the influence of delegated autho-"rity is diminiſhed by diſtance, and with "what precaution I ought to conduct myſelf "towards men ſo impetuous and reſolute. A-"mong them there are ſome of a diſintereſted "ſoul, and a feeling and generous heart; theſe "are eaſily governed. But the greater part are "blind, turbulent, and, above all, avaricious; "theſe, I confeſs to you, I fear myſelf unable "to controul. My friend, ſhould hoſtilities pro-"voke them, I cannot anſwer for their conduct. "A peaceful reception on the part of your peo-"ple, is the only means of eſtabliſhing between "us concord and good underſtanding. It is "your part to aſſiſt me in conciliating their "minds. I find one half of the empire eager "to join me. I have more than a ſufficient "force to ravage the country; but without

"your

" your good offices, not enough to preſerve order
" and peace. I am proceeding towards Caſſa-
" malca, where the Inca of Quito hath, they tell
" me, collected his forces. Many crimes are
" imputed to him; but can you be the friend of
" a tyrant? I am unable to think it: and your
" eſteem is his apology. Give me the meeting.
" We will contrive together how to conquer them,
" without oppreſſion.

" Las-Caſas, your friend, and I may call him
" alſo mine, the virtuous Las-Caſas, whom I left
" dying at Hiſpaniola, would write to you by me.
" I have ſent you his letter. Much do I fear,
" my dear Alonzo, that it contains his laſt fare-
" well."

The affliction which filled the heart of Alonzo, on reading theſe words, was conſiderably increaſed, when he threw his eyes on the letter of Las-Caſas himſelf.

" If you are yet alive, my dear Alonzo, if
" you ſtill continue among our Indians, and if
" Pizarro ſhould find you again upon thoſe
" ſhores which he deſigns to viſit, receive from
" my hands this laſt and affectionate pledge of
" ſacred friendſhip. I am dying. I have lived
" only to grieve. God hath permitted that,
" under my own eyes, I ſhould behold an ac-
" cumulation

" cumulation of every ſort of crime and diſtreſs.
" What have I to regret in the world?

" I intruſted you with my fears concerning
" the enterprize of Pizarro; but the virtues of
" the Hero have entirely diſpelled them. Pi-
" zarro thinks as we do. He feels that it is far
" preferable to be the protector and father of
" the Indians, than their conqueror and ty-
" rant. Unite your efforts with his, to gain
" him their eſteem and affection: he merits
" them in my opinion, no leſs than yourſelf.
" Adieu. The ſymptoms of my diſſolution
" ſeem to increaſe. To-morrow, perhaps, I
" ſhall ſtand before the throne of my judge;
" and if it be permitted me to implore his mer-
" cy, it will be for the Spaniards, who wor-
" ſhip, and inſult him; and for theſe Indians,
" miſled by error, but ſincere, gentle and bene-
" ficent, whom he created, whom he loves, and
" whom he will not make eternally miſerable.
" Protect them, conſider them, next to yourſelf,
" as my deareſt friends, whom I ſhall love be-
" yond the grave."

This letter was moiſtened by the tears of friendſhip. Alonzo a hundred times kiſſed it in the moſt reſpectful manner. Ataliba could not hear it without partaking in the concern that ſwelled the young man's boſom. " Who then," aſked

aſked he, "is this Las-Caſas, this upright "man?"—"Ah!" ſaid Alonzo, "inquire of "this Cacique and his people." The Cacique was Capana. He had heard the letter of Las-Caſas; and leaning on his club, he ſhed from his down-caſt eyes a flood of tears. "He is "not a man," ſaid he, "he is a celeſtial meſ-"ſenger ſent down from his God, to ſoften "tygers, and to comfort mankind. We would have "worſhipped him, if he would have ſuffered us."

This teſtimony, but that eſpecially of Alonzo, prevailed over the terrible impreſſions, which the example of Montezuma, and all the ſufferings of Mexico had made on the heart of Ataliba. "I ſubmit myſelf to you," ſaid he to his faithful Alonzo. "Go, meet Pizarro; poſ-"ſeſs yourſelf of his deſigns; and if he cor-"reſpond to the character you have received of "him, anſwer him with all the openneſs and "integrity of a Prince who is your friend, and "who deſires alſo to be his."

The retinue of Alonzo conſiſted of Indians burthened with the moſt magnificent preſents; and theſe treaſures * ſhould have excited in their

* *Theſe treaſures.*] It was here that the Indians, obſerving the horſes champ on their bits, ſuppoſed they would feed on metal; and under this perſuaſion, which no one was ſolicitous to correct, they were anxious to place before them veſſels filled with grains of gold.

minds

minds a favourable diſpoſition. But ſuch was the thirſt of gold amongſt the Caſtilians, that what ought to have ſlaked, ſerved but to increaſe it.

The conference of Pizarro with Alonzo was the effuſion of two hearts, abounding with generoſity and frankneſs. The ſtate of affairs on both ſides was diſcloſed with candour. Pizarro diſcovered nothing in the Inca of Cuſco, but an exceſs of pride unreſtrained by prudence, and in Ataliba the conſcious dignity of a feeling and noble heart. Alonzo, on his part, perceived the danger of irritating in the Caſtilians that rage for gold and thirſt of blood, which had only been ſoothed for a time, and which a fanatical barbarity was eager to provoke. It was ruled that Molina ſhould precede Pizarro in the fields of Caſſamalca; that the Spaniſh general ſhould advance with his two hundred men, and that the Indians of his party ſhould bring up the rear. Each equally confident of the other's fidelity, mutually embraced; and Alonzo returned to the Indian camp.

The King of Quito was anxious and impatient for the return of his friend. But his ſolicitude was ſpeedily removed; and he aſſembled his warriors to communicate his joy. The Peruvians rejoiced; but the Mexicans, with a gloomy

gloomy air and eyes fixed on the ground, heard in ſilence the tenders of peace that Alonzo brought back. Their Chief, who thought he perceived the Inca to be falling into a deſtructive ſnare, was earneſt to apprize him of his danger. "Hah then, Prince," ſaid he, "have you for-"gotten the fate of Montezuma and of Mexi-"co? You give up your country to the ſame "plunderers that deſolated ours, and over-"whelmed it with blood! You commit yourſelf "into the hands of thoſe who have fettered our "Kings and burnt them alive! Ah! will not "our example inſtruct and alarm you! Too "fully admoniſhed by our misfortunes, learn "to be wiſe at our expence. See you not here "the ſame connexion in the cauſes of your own "ruin, as were apparent in our deſtruction? "Our empire was divided; this is the ſame. "A fallacious oracle preſcribed to us the ſhame-"ful law of bending before our tyrants; a like "oracle injoins it on you. Our King, ſe-"duced and deceived by the appearances of "peace, ſincerity, and benevolence, ruined him-"ſelf, and deſtroyed his people; and will you, "unhappy Prince, give yourſelf up, like him! "Ah! had Montezuma poſſeſſed that firmneſs "and courage we have beheld in you, he would "have ſaved Mexico. Why then ſuffer your-

ſelf

"ſelf to be depreſſed, and offer your neck to "the yoke? Are you deſtitute of hope? with- "out reſources? remove from hence. Leave "Palmore at the head of your army. Let him "attack the Indians. Theſe Caciques and I, "with our two thouſand men, will charge the "Caſtilians; and we will take the ſhorteſt way "to vengeance or death."

Alonzo thought it incumbent on himſelf to reply. "Inca," ſaid he, "the character of "my nation is bravery and pride. Theſe are "evils only to its foes. Its paſſion is a thirſt "for gold, and this you may eaſily aſſuage. All "elſe is perſonal: vice and virtue are produc- "tions of the ſame climates. A people, which "is made up of individuals, becomes wicked "or good, according to the example before "them. It is animated with the diſpoſitions of "the ravager, or the hero that conducts them. "Cortes hath deſtroyed his conqueſt and diſ- "graced his exploits. Pizarro, more humane, "ſincere, and generous, wiſhes to ſpare, to "render happy and peaceful the world he ſhall "have ſubjected, and to acquire glory, unſul- "lied by reproach or remorſe. Pizarro is a Spa- "niard; but am not I myſelf one? Have you "found me deceitful, avaricious or cruel? No? "you believe me ſincere and beneficent.

"Why then will you not ſuppoſe that Pizarro, "at leaſt, may be like me? You will anſwer "for me, I will anſwer for him; and I will "anſwer, on the faith of Las-Caſas, on the "faith of that Spaniard, the moſt upright, vir- "tuous, and compaſſionate of men, and, more "than all, the beſt friend the Indians ever en- "joyed. He could not deceive me; but he him- "ſelf might be deceived; he might have been "impoſed on. Be then prudent, without being "unjuſt. Stretch out your hands to peace, with- "out, however, diſcarding your arms; and, in "the midſt of a numerous camp, dare to receive "two hundred men who preſent themſelves be- "fore you as friends."

The Inca, full of the confidence with which Alonzo had inſpired him, was not even willing to prepare for his own defence. This, however, was provided for by Alonzo. He appointed eight thouſand Indians of experienced valour to attend the Inca's perſon. On the right wing, and in front, he placed the Mexicans, with the troop that he himſelf had commanded. The ſavages of Capana formed the oppoſite wing, and Palmore, with his army, occupied the centre, and completed an incloſure around the throne of his King. "Prince, I pray Heaven," ſaid the young man, "that ſincerity may pre-

"ſide

" ſide in this conference, and connect between
" Pizarro and yourſelf the ties of a laſting peace.
" If my prayers be unſucceſsful, and my hopes
" fallacious, I will ſhed my blood in your defence.
" Every thing in my power I have done. No-
" thing have I left to uncertainty; nor will there
" be any ground to reproach me."

CHAP. XLIX.

THE approaching night ſuſpended this flux and reflux of fears and of hopes with which a perplexing uncertainty and confuſed preſentiments had agitated their minds. But thoſe emotions which had been ſoothed by ſlumber, were inſtantly renewed, when, by the firſt rays of the morning, they beheld the troop of Pizarro advancing, which were eaſily to be diſtinguiſhed by the ſplendor that glittered on their arms. They approached, and the King, elevated on a throne of gold, which twelve Caciques ſupported, was prepared to receive them. The Spaniards opened into two lines, of which the cavalry formed the wings, having at their head Pizarro, and twenty warriors who, like himſelf,

all on horſe-back, advanced, with a ſlow and ſtately pace, till they came within the reach of a javelin. Pizarro then ordered them to halt; and, accompanied by Valverde and ſix of his lieutenants, preſented himſelf, with a noble confidence, before the throne of the Inca.

Silence was preſerved, whilſt the Caſtilian hero, continuing on his horſe, which bore him on a level with the throne, addreſſed the King in theſe words: "Great Prince, you know who "we are. And I wiſh to Heaven that the name "of Spaniards had been leſs famous in the New "World, ſince it hath been indebted for its "fame to the moſt terrible calamities! But the "reproach and ſhame of guilt ſhould fall only "on the guilty; and if fame hath extended it "to the innocent, it hath been unjuſt; which "you ought not to be. If your enemies may "be credited, I muſt regard you as the moſt "barbarous of tyrants. But your friends have "aſſured me of your equity, and I believe them. "Treat us in the ſame manner; or, at leaſt, "condemn us not till you know us, and cauſe "not the evils of which we are innocent to recoil "on our heads.

"When the Incas your anceſtors founded this "empire, and ſubjected to the regulations of "their laws, the people of this continent, they "ſaid

" ſaid to them: We bring to you a ſyſtem of
" religion, arts and laws, which will render you
" better and more happy. This was their title
" to conqueſt. The ſame alſo is mine; and like
" them I would introduce myſelf to you by fa-
" vours. I ſhall have no difficulty to perſuade
" you that we are ſuperior in induſtry and know-
" ledge to all the people of this World. They
" are the fruits of three thouſand years experi-
" ence by which we have been enriched. In your
" laws I ſhall make ſuch changes only as you
" yourſelf ſhall judge conducive to the good of
" your people; whilſt theſe laws, and the autho-
" rity which ſupports them, ſhall ſtill continue in
" your own hands: your people ſhall not expe-
" rience the misfortune of loſing a good King.
" Protected by mine, you will become his friend,
" his ally, his tributary; and this tribute, in-
" conſiderable to you, is only a participation of a
" production, which nature hath laviſhed on you,
" and withholden from us. In barter for gold,
" we will bring you iron, a preſent of ineſtimable
" utility, and to you a thouſand times more pre-
" cious. Our fruits, our harveſts, our flocks,
" which conſtitute the riches of our climate;
" ſome animals of an exquiſite flavour, contribu-
" ting to the nouriſhment of man, others, at

" once, ſtrong and tractable, ordained to partake " of our labours; the productions of our arts, " which inhance the enjoyment of life, the in- " ventions for aiding our ſenſes, and increaſing " our ſtrength, the means of healing our diſor- " ders, or aſſuaging our ſufferings; a thouſand " depredations that the induſtry of man hath com- " mitted on nature, a thouſand new diſcoveries " to ſupply our wants, and augment our plea- " ſures: theſe are the bleſſings I promiſe you, in " return for this metal, this ſhining duſt, of " which you are happy not to experience the " want. Inca, ſuch is the treaty of peace and " mutual commerce, that my maſter, Charles of " Auſtria, a powerful Monarch of the Eaſt, hath " commiſſioned me to offer."

Ataliba, with a heart full of joy and gratitude, replied to Pizarro, that he amply juſtified the opinion he had been taught to entertain of his rectitude and generoſity; that he ſaw nothing but juſtice in what he had propoſed; that the mountains from whence gold was drawn, ſhould be open to the Caſtilians; and that he ſhould conſider this as an inadequate compenſation for the friendſhip of an enlightened people, who brought to him knowledge, and the alliance of a great King.

The

"The moſt ſublime part of our knowledge," ſaid the Caſtilian hero, "is that which reſpects "the exiſtence of a God, by whom the Earth, "the Heaven, and the Sun were created. Inca, "let not this offend you: that glorious luminary, "whoſe children your anceſtors called themſelves, "is without doubt, the moſt ſtriking of the wonders of nature; but it came from the hands of "the Eternal Creator; and enlightens the world "in obedience to him. It is then this God, who, "at one view, preſcribed to the Sun its courſe, to "the Sea its bounds, to the Earth its ſtation, to "the Heavens their revolutions, and to all Nature its different motions, its order, its invariable laws, it is he alone whom we ought to adore."

"The God whom you have deſcribed," replied the Inca, "was not entirely unknown to "us: he hath a temple amongſt us: this temple "is dedicated to him who animates the world *. "But why may not this exalted Being be the Sun? "This ſplendour, this majeſty, ſeem to be worthy "of him."

"Inca," aſked Pizarro, "if I ſhould ſee a traveller go and return, every year, from one extremity of your empire to the other, without e-

* Pacha Camac.

"ver

" ver relaxing his ſpeed, or reſting a moment on
" his journey, or deviating a ſtep from his road,
" ſhould I ſuppoſe him to be the King of the
" country or only one of his meſſengers? The
" God of the univerſe is neither limited by any
" portion of time, nor circumſcribed within any
" extent of ſpace. He whom a tranſient cloud
" obſcures, and who can enlighten but one half
" of the globe, without leaving the other in dark-
" neſs, is not the God of the univerſe. I have
" been told, that your people formerly worſhipped
" the ſea, rivers, and mountains. Theſe, like the
" Sun, hold their place in the ſyſtem of nature,
" but are all ſubordinate, and obedient to ſuperior
" controul. Let us worſhip him who governs
" the whole; and that you may form an idea,
" though infinitely inadequate, of his perfections,
" hear what our ſages have lately diſcloſed.
" Theſe men, occupied in obſerving the appear-
" ances of the Heavens, are all perſuaded that
" the world we inhabit is not the only habitable
" world; but that there are thouſands in the
" regions of ſpace; and that each of the ſtars
" is a Sun, which, though at an immeaſurable
" diſtance from us, was formed to enlighten
" other worlds. Let your imagination ſoar into
" this immenſity, and contemplate theſe Suns

" and

" and worlds all ſubject to the ſame laws. He, " who ſuperintends them all and whom they all " obey, is the God I adore. Judge how far this " God is ſuperior to yours."

" You confound me, while you inſtruct me," ſaid the Inca, " I begin to believe that our an- " ceſtors were miſtaken. Tell me only if your " God be juſt and good, and whether his law " requires men to be like him?"—" He," anſwered Pizarro, " is juſtice and goodneſs itſelf; " and the only duty of man is to reſemble him." —" I aſk no more," replied the Inca. " Come " and inſtruct us, illuminate us with your reaſon, " enrich us with your wiſdom; and be aſſured " of finding us docile and grateful."

Thus every thing went ſmoothly on, till the hypocritical and furious Valverde required to ſpeak in his turn. " Yes, Prince," ſaid he to the Inca, " what you have heard is true, but " truth that is obvious to the underſtanding. It " is now neceſſary for you to ſuſpend the opera- " tions of your reaſon, or ſubject it to the yoke " of the faith. Hear what the faith teaches." He then imprudently * plunging into the pro-

* *Imprudently.*] " Suppoſing, perhaps," ſays Benzoni, " that " the King was inſtantaneouſly become an adept in theology." *Penſando forſe che il re foſſe un qualche gran theologo divenuto. (Hiſt. du Nouv. Monde, liv. 3.)*

found

found darkneſs of our awful myſteries, in the number of which he comprized the authority of a man ordained by God himſelf to command Kings, to exerciſe domination over nations, to diſpoſe of crowns, and all the poſſeſſions of ſovereigns and ſubjects, and to exterminate thoſe who diſclaim the plenitude of his power.

The Peruvian monarch, aſtoniſhed at a doctrine ſo ſtrange, mildly inquired of the propounder, from whence he had collected theſe poſitions. "From this book." replied Valverde, in an arrogant tone, "from this ſacred book, dictated "by the Holy Ghoſt himſelf." The Inca, without emotion, receiving the book, and looking upon it, ſaid: "Every thing that Pizarro hath "told me, I can conceive, and, without difficulty, "believe. But what I hear from you appears to "be unintelligible; and this book is ſilent, it "tells me nothing." He added, it is ſaid, ſome offenſive expreſſions * concerning the man, who arrogated to himſelf the right of commanding Kings, and diſpoſing of Empires; and either through contempt, or negligence, in returning the book to Valverde, let it fall.

* *Some offenſive expreſſions.*] "That the Pope muſt certainly "be an egregious fool, to give away ſo freely what was not his "own." *E che il Pontifice doveva eſſere un qualche gran pazzo, poi che dava coſi liberamente quello d'altri.* (*Benzoni, Hiſt. du Nouv. Monde, liv.* 3.

This

This was enough. The fanatical monk, tranſported with rage, ran towards the Spaniards and began to cry out for vengeance in the name of Religion, which this barbarian had trampled under foot *.

Inſtantly, a vigorous and deſtructive fire ſucceeded, the harquebuſs commenced hoſtilities, and gave the ſignal to commit the blackeſt of crimes. The battalion opened; and from the centre iſſued forth thunder and death. At the diſcharge of theſe brazen volcanoes, from whence proceeded flames and a ſtupendous report, at the unexpected maſſacre and the inviſible ſtrokes that fell before the throne, the King was confounded; he beheld at his feet his guard, aſtoniſhed and trembling, crowd together for their general ſafety, and periſh before his eyes, like a fearful flock, amongſt which the deſtructive blaze of lightening had deſcended. The Inca, having forbidden them to commit any kind of hoſtility, they ſtrictly obſerved his prohibition. Alonzo, enraged, incited them to follow him, and charge in deſpair this troop of aſſaſſins. "Avenge "yourſelves, avenge me of the traitors that "diſhonour my country. Defend, ſave your "King." The brave youth, at theſe words,

* *Which this barbarian had trampled under foot.*] *Uccideto queſti cani che diſpreggiano la legge di dio. (Ibid.)*

felt

felt himſelf wounded, and fell. The Inca, at the ſight of his fall, broke forth in exclamations of ſorrow.

"It is our part," ſaid Orozimbo, "to exter-"minate theſe monſters. Follow me, my friends, "and let us ſilence their thunder." He ſpake, and at the head of the Princes of his blood, and his two thouſand Indians, undauntedly marched up to the mouths of the cannon, which were pouring forth their fires againſt him. The blood of his wounded friends burſt forth upon him; fragments of their fleſh and ſplinters of their bones flew every where around him; his fury blinded and tranſported him. Telaſco, who was ſtill left, continued to follow him. Unfortunate friends! as they were ruſhing headlong on the battery, a dreadful exploſion reduced them to atoms. They diſappeared in a cloud of ſmoke, and thoſe of this brave and unhappy troop that eſcaped the fire were mowed down by the Caſtilian ſwords.

This terrible and inſtantaneous diſaſter diſcouraged neither Palmore nor Capana: both advanced to ſurround the enemy. But, two ſquadrons of Caſtilians, at the ſame moment, impelled by unconquerable fury, file off to aſſail them. The commanders, unable to reſtrain the impetuoſity of their ſoldiers, give way to their rage.

rage. They fly through a cloud of arrows, which ſtick in their horſes. The animals, not leſs furious than their riders, break into the oppoſing battalions, ruſh through their lances, trample upon a crowd of Indians already beaten down; and the ſword, reeking with blood, redoubles the horrid carnage.

Of Ataliba's guard ſix thouſand were already maſſacred, and the ſame fate awaits the reſt. Thoſe who ſupport the throne have ſcarce time to ſucceed one another; all are cut off; and the dying fall on the dead, whoſe places they ſupplied. Pizarro, who had thrown himſelf before his ſoldiers to ſtop their ruthleſs fury, not being able to make them obey, or even hear him, ſaw but one means of preſerving the life of the Inca. He put himſelf at the head of theſe murderers, preceded them, entered the camp, arrived at the throne, with one hand diverting the ſword that was raiſed againſt Ataliba, himſelf received the ſtroke, while with the other he ſeized the Prince, dragged him from his ſeat, threw him at his feet, and cried out while he guarded him. "Let "us take him alive for the ſake of his treaſure." This ſpeech ſuſpended their rage.

Pale, terrified, diſtracted, the King fell, and beheld himſelf weltering in Indian gore. He diſcovered the bodies of his friends torn, muti-

lated, and hacked, and embraced them with ſuch cries of diſtreſs that even the hearts of their executioners were moved. Amongſt the reſt he perceived Alonzo. "Dear and ill-fated friend! "thou haſt undone me," cried he; "but they "deceived thee: it was thy misfortune to poſſeſs "an Indian ſoul." At theſe words, obſerving that Alonzo ſtill breathed: "Ah! cruel man," ſaid he to Pizarro, "at leaſt ſave him who delivered "me to thee."

Pizarro cauſed both of them to be carried from the field, and committed them to the care of Ferdinand his brother, whilſt himſelf flew to the plain, with the hope of ſaving the deplorable remains of Palmore's legion, on which the Caſtilians were venting their barbarous rage. There, Valverde *, in the midſt of ſlaughter, with a cruciſix in his hand, while his mouth was foaming with rage, exclaimed: "Friends, "Chriſtians, go on, go on. The deſtroying "angel is your guide. Strike only with the "point, that ye break not your ſwords; plunge

* *There, Valverde.*] "As to the Monk, who began this "outrage, he ceaſed not, during the whole of the carnage, to "lead on and ſtimulate the ſoldiers, adviſing them to uſe only "their ſwords, and not to employ themſelves in hacking and "cleaving, for fear of breaking their blades." *Perche di taglio non rompeſſero le ſpade. (Benzoni, ibid.)*

"them,

"them, dye them in blood."——"Begone, exe-
"crable monſter," ſaid Pizarro, "retire, or I
"will make thee yield up thine atrocious ſoul."
The affrighted monſter withdrew, trembling.
"Stop, barbarians! ſtop," cried Pizarro to his
ſoldiers, "or turn your arms on me."

Either from reſpect to their commander, or elſe, that by ſo furious an exertion, their ſtrength was exhauſted, they obeyed; and Pizarro led them back.

In this day of horrors and crimes, humanity for a moment prevailed. Capana, perceiving that all hope of ſucceſs was gone, fled with an handful of his ſavages. A party that purſued him, came up and ſurrounded them. The Cacique, in deſpair, turned, ſtrung his bow, and with a vindictive eye ſelected the leader of the enemy's troop. This was Gonſalva Davila. The arrow flew; and the youth fell mortally wounded. They ruſhed on the Cacique, ſeized him, and dragged him to the feet of Davila to rend him in pieces in his preſence. Gonſalva, half-opening his dying eyes, and diſcovering him to be the perſon who had given him his life, and reſtored him to freedom, when he was wholly at his mercy, ſaid: "Is it you, generous Capana," extending towards him his trembling arms? "Is it

" from your hand that I receive my death? you " once conferred a favour on me; to your cle- " mency I was indebted for my life; to your " bounty for my liberty. I have made a cruel uſe " of them! Heaven is juſt: it hath choſen you " to deprive me of your own gifts. Caſtilians, " hear me, and, from my example, tremble at the " hand of God that hath ſtricken me. To this " Indian I owe my all; ſuffer me to acquit my- " ſelf. Let him live, and let him and his people " be free. Come, my brother, my benefactor, " my deſtroyer, and my friend, come that I may " embrace thee in my death. I ought from you " to have learnt juſtice and humanity." Theſe words were immediately followed by his laſt ſigh; and Capana, with his ſavages, went to ſeek, beyond the mountains of the Eaſt, amongſt the Moxes, who were ſtill free, or amongſt the barbarous inhabitants of the Andes, who ſatiated their thirſt with human blood, a refuge againſt the rage of a people ſtill more inhuman.

CHAP.

CHAP. L.

THE Spaniards, fatigued with murder, and burdened with the valuable ſpoils they had amaſſed in the Indian camp, were almoſt all of them collected within the walls of Caſſamalca. Some, of theſe however the number was ſmall, retired in ſilence, aſhamed and ſhocked, reproaching themſelves for the blood they had ſpilt. At firſt, to avoid the diſgrace of deſerting their companions, they had yielded to their example; but having ſatisfied the requiſitions of honour, they abandoned themſelves to remorſe. The reſt, inſolent and boaſtful, applauded themſelves for having avenged the faith; and by a dreadful inſtance awed the nations. To theſe it was that Valverde complained of Pizarro, with all the violence of a ſeditious fury.

"Caſtilians," ſaid he, "ye have avenged "your religion, which a barbarian had inſult-"ed. Arm yourſelves with conſtancy; for this "heroic zeal is accounted a crime. Pizarro re-"gards you as aſſaſſins who have merited death; "and, were his power equal to his will, he would

" inflict it on you all. His ſole deſign in ſeiz-
" ing this King, who, by his orders, is here
" guarded in the palace, was to reſcue him from
" you, and to ſave him. It was through him
" that he hoped to make himſelf independent
" and abſolute. The traitor Alonzo, their
" mutual agent, carried on their correſpon-
" dence, and concerted this conſpiracy. Had
" ye heard the language of Pizarro to this ſa-
" vage, ye would have ſhuddered. Charles
" was repreſented as ſupplicating Ataliba. An
" alliance, inſtead of a conqueſt, and a treaty of
" commerce, inſtead of a tribute, were the ob-
" jects of his humble ſolicitations. And as to
" religion! . . . . . it would have filled you with
" horror to hear him. Pizarro ſpoke of it in
" the language of the impious. He avoided an
" expoſition of the faith; he bluſhed at our
" myſteries; in the preſence of infidels he was
" aſhamed to ſhew himſelf a Chriſtian. Full
" of indignation, I ſpoke; I raiſed my voice;
" I declared what a Chriſtian ſhould neither
" diſguiſe nor conceal. Ye beheld with what
" an inſult Ataliba replied. And it is this that
" his friend, his ally, his protector, reproaches
" you for having puniſhed. As for me, I am
" odious to him, and I comfort myſelf with the
" thought. I ſaw the ſacred manual of our faith
" trodden

" trodden under foot, and I cried out for venge-
" ance; ſuch is my crime. It might be neceſſary
" to diſſemble ſacrilege, to applaud blaſphemy,
" and betray religion in favour of impiety; I
" have not done it; and I expect to ſuffer piti-
" leſs humiliations, reproaches, exile, perhaps
" martydom! . . . . ." Scarcely had he ended, when a hundred voices at once exclaimed, " He " ſhall be protected, defended, and revered as the " avenger of the faith."

This commotion in their minds againſt Pizarro was greatly increaſed by his arrival. As he paſſed thro' his ſoldiers, he perceived in them no ſymptoms either of fear or of ſhame; they viewed him with a fixed eye, prepared to revolt, ſhould an angry expreſſion or invective eſcape him. Further on, Valverde, in the midſt of ſeditious fanatics, appeared ſtill more daring; and received with an unaltered countenance, his menacing looks. Pizarro went through the crowd, preſerving a gloomy ſilence. He inquired for Ataliba, and was conducted to the priſon; there he beheld this unhappy prince ſurrounded by a ſmall number of Caſtilians, who, with eyes fixt on the ground, reſembled condemned criminals more than conquerors.

Ataliba, in his diſtreſs, preſerved too much firmneſs and dignity to utter a complaint. But when

when he beheld Pizarro enter, he ſtarted, turned off his eyes with horror, repulſed him, and rejected his embraces. "You ſuppoſe me treacherous and perjured," ſaid Pizarro; "but behold this hand, wounded and bleeding, which warded off from you a mortal blow. Is this the hand of an enemy? I drew you from the throne, where twenty ſwords were aiming to pierce your heart; I have impriſoned you to protect you from the fury of thoſe whom I was unable to diſarm, or reſtrain. Aſk theſe warriors, if, during this horrible maſſacre, I did exert my utmoſt efforts to ſuppreſs it. What could you deſire from me? What more could one man do? My ſoldiers have already diſobeyed my commands, and I have every reaſon to apprehend they will ſoon reſiſt my authority. But, of this, unhappy Prince, be aſſured, I will protect your life at the hazard of my own."

The Inca at theſe words, regarded him with eyes in which reſentment had yielded to tenderneſs, and ſuffered ſome tears to eſcape him. "I loved you," ſaid he, "as ſoon as I ſaw you, and my ſoul, captivated by yours, had relinquiſhed to you both my thoughts and my will. With what view then could you betray me? With what pleaſure could you behold the

"ſlaughter

" ſlaughter of an inoffenſive people, who had re-
" ceived you as a God? No, it could not be
" your orders. You weep! Come and embrace
" me. Your pity conſoles the heart of a wretch
" who ſtill loves you. But, tell me, is all loſt?
" Is my army entirely deſtroyed?"—" I have
" ſaved all of them I could?"—anſwered the
Hero. " If it be poſſible," replied the Inca,
" reſcue me from the hands of theſe traitors:
" their ſhouts of joy diſtract me; their approach
" excites my horror. Spare me the dreadful
" puniſhment of hearing and ſeeing them. Sa-
" tiated with blood, they thirſt for gold; I wiſh
" to gratify them. I engage, for my ranſom, to
" fill the room * in which we at preſent are, as
" high as my arm can reach. Let them carry
" with them theſe pernicious treaſures, and leave
" us to live in peace."

" Your cauſe," ſaid Pizarro, " is mine;
" and I will do every thing for you that can
" be expected from the zeal of a friend. Let
" us allow ſome time for their fury to ſubſide,
" and both arm ourſelves, you with conſtancy,
" and I with reſolution. I leave you, and am

* " The apartment in which he was confined was twenty-two feet in length and ſixteen in breadth." Dr Robertſon's Hiſt. of America, Vol. II. p. 177.

" going

" going to take care of Alonzo, whoſe ſituation " afflicts and alarms me."

Pizarro, as he left the priſon of Ataliba, felt his heart torn with grief; but a ſight, ſtill more diſtreſsful, awaited him in the place where Alonzo was dying.

Before the young man had recovered from the oppreſſive faintneſs into which he had ſunk, they had dreſſed his wound. But being re-animated by its anguiſh, he looked around him and beheld himſelf in the midſt of Caſtilians, ſtill reeking from the carnage. He ſhuddered with horror; and collecting his remaining ſtrength, ſaid to them: " Barbarians! how durſt ye ap- " proach and recal me to life? Ye have ren- " dered it odious to me. It is time for you to ex- " preſs your compaſſion and offer your aſſiſtance, " after having committed, on the faith of peace, " twenty thouſand murders! Theſe are Chri- " ſtian heroes, dyed in blood, and panting with " rage. O fanatical monſters! Heaven, juſt " Heaven will not leave ſuch an execrable crime " unrevenged. It is not to remorſe, but to the " impetuoſity of your own paſſions that I, with my " dying breath, devote you. I know your hearts, " and already foreſee pride and avarice kindling " amongſt you the flames of infernal hatred. " Armed againſt each other, ye will, like beaſts

" of

" of prey, devour one another. Ye will rend " aſunder theſe greedy entrails, and theſe hearts " luſting for blood, which neither the tears of in- " nocence, nor the cries of humanity could ever " move. Retire, infamous robbers, baſe murder- " ers, and let me die." On ſaying theſe words, and ſtripping off the bandage, he tore open his wound with his hands.

Pizarro found him lying in his blood; and the ingraged Caſtilians retired at his approach. Alonzo ſtretched forth to him his hands, and lifting up his eyes to Heaven, as if to implore forgiveneſs for his violence, breathed his laſt.

At the ſame inſtant, Gonzalo Pizarro came to ſpeak to the General in private. " What do you " here," ſaid he, " they have formed a confe- " deracy, are ready to revolt, and appoint a leader " in your ſtead. Appear, fruſtrate this conſpi- " racy, calm their minds, reduce them to order, " or we are all undone."

Pizarro, in this perilous ſituation, perceived the two rocks of violence and lenity it was neceſſary for him to avoid. He appeared at the entrance of the palace, and there having aſſembled his ſoldiers, with a countenance expreſſive of dignity and ſorrow, addreſſed them: " Caſti- " lians, ye have butchered an innocent and " peaceable people, who confided in you, freely " imparted

"imparted to you their property, reſpected you "as their gueſts, and who, renouncing their own "religion, were deſirous of embracing the wor- "ſhip and laws of Chriſtianity as ſoon as they "could be taught them. Their King forbade "every kind of hoſtility towards us: And ſo "far were they from violating his command, "that they beheld a general maſſacre begun be- "fore they had ſpilt a drop of your blood, or "even drawn an arrow. They lie lifeleſs on "the duſt before the face of Heaven, that Hea- "ven who will be your judge and theirs. The "deſtruction of twenty thouſand men, had they "been criminals, would have been a dreadful "ſpectacle, how much more ſhocking then muſt "it be, when the twenty thouſand ſufferers are "innocent? Their King requires from you the "rights of burial. Grant them this mark of hu- "manity, which is always allowed to the moſt "implacable enemies."

Inſtead of the complaints, reproaches, and threats, which they expected from a commander, whom their conduct had ſo juſtly exaſperated, this moderate expoſtulation made a deep impreſſion. The ſoldiers replied that they would not refuſe to bury the dead, if the reſt of the Indians in the neighbouring villages would come to aſſiſt them. "They will "aid

"aid you," ſaid Pizarro: "to-morrow, on "theſe bloody plains, they will meet you at "day-break. Go now to repoſe: Ye muſt be "fatigued with your murders."

Every one, from this moment, ſtruck at the melancholy picture, felt his blood thrill with horror. Nature inſenſibly reſumed its influence over them, and the hearts of the guilty were wounded by remorſe.

In the villages the aged, women, and children only remained. Pizarro ſent orders for them to come, at the dawn, and help to inter the dead. Theſe unhappy people all obeyed. As ſoon as the morning afforded light ſufficient, for the commencement of their labour, the Caſtilians beheld theſe women, children, and old men reſort to their melancholy duty. Their deep and ſilent grief, their paleneſs and dejection, excited compaſſion in the moſt unfeeling hearts. But, when their eyes met, amongſt the heaps of ſlain, thoſe who where dear to them, when they threw themſelves with piercing cries on their corſes, cold and bloody, preſſed them in their arms, bathed them with their tears, clung with their ſobbing lips, one while to the livid mouths, and another to the gaping wounds of a huſband, a father, or a ſon: the murderers could not ſupport the ſight without uttering expreſſions of ſorrow and re-

pentance. The aſſaſſin of the father embraced the children; the hands that had been dipt in the blood of the ſon and the huſband drew back the wife and the mother, from the pit in which they attempted to bury themſelves with the objects of their regard. In this manner, were varied during this lamentable day, the torments of remorſe.

On their return to Caſſamalca, the Caſtilians, with dejected foreheads, eyes fixt on the ground, and heavy hearts, appeared before Pizarro. "Is "it finiſhed," aſked he, "and doth this unhappy "earth conceal in its boſom all the traces of our "exceſſes?"—Yes, it is finiſhed."—"Have ye," ſaid the general, "infatuated and cruel men, have "ye then ſeen this carnage at which nature trem-"bles? Yourſelves were the perpetrators . . . . . "But no," cried he, "this abominable crime, the "blackeſt and moſt atrocious that the rage of hell "hath ever inſpired, I impute not to you; behold "the execrable author. It is he, it is this rave-"nous tyger, this ferocious hypocrite, it is Val-"verde, who, by your hands, hath ſpilt ſo much "blood. Know that, at the moment, when he "cried out to you for vengeance on an inſulted "God, this people and their King were ado-"ring him with us, and hearing with delight "the wonders of his power. I ſwear it to you,

"and

"and I call the warriors who accompanied me "to confirm the truth. They heard the homage "of the virtuous Prince, whom this villain hath "ſlandered. Charge the crimes then on him of "which his impoſture hath been the only cauſe; "and as an impure victim, let him fly far from "us to ſome deſart iſland, to expiate, if poſſible, "the guilt of twenty thouſand aſſaſſinations with "which the traitor hath ſullied your hands. Let "vultures and vipers prey on his unnatural heart, "as on their proper food."

Valverde then came forward to defend himſelf.

"Wretch!" ſaid Pizarro to him, at the ſame time ſeizing him with violence and dragging him to his feet, "come, ſpeak and ſay if thou didſt "expect that a King, who had never ſeen thee, "ſhould underſtand what thou thyſelf canſt not "comprehend, and on thy word implicitly be- "lieve doctrines repugnant to reaſon. Thy "book was ſacred to thee; but how could it be "ſo to him, who knew not what it was, whence "it came, nor what it contained? It fell from "his hand; and for this offence, alas! which, "perhaps, was not intended, thou cauſeſt a "whole people to be ſlaughtered! and I heard "thee, in the midſt of the carnage, crying out, "Let no one eſcape! Go, monſter, I leave

"thee, for thy puniſhment, an hateful life; but "go drag it out far from us, an object of horror "to heaven, to earth, and to thyſelf, if there re- "main in thee a heart that is capable of re- "morſe." On pronouncing theſe words, in the tone of an inexorable judge, the boldeſt friends of Valverde were afraid to undertake his defence. He was ſeized, pale and trembling; and orders were immediately given to rid themſelves of him for ever.

"At length," reſumed the general, "we "are come again to ourſelves; and reaſon, hu- "manity, and glory, will preſide in our coun- "ſels. The King demands to pay his ranſom; "and ye will be aſtoniſhed at the pile of gold that "he offers to accumulate in his priſon. Caſti- "lians, I have promiſed to grant it: Your ſhips "will return freighted with immenſe treaſures. "But, in the name of that God who is our judge, "and of the King whom we ſerve, exerciſe no "more cruelties: Let us forbear them, at leaſt, "to a conquered people."

From that time the promiſes of Ataliba occupied their thoughts. This King, preſerving in fetters that equanimity which conſtitutes the mean between pride and dejection, governed his people, though confined to a priſon; and his people obeyed him not leſs willingly than when he

he ſat on a throne. From all quarters they were ſeen reſorting to Caſſamalca, ſome bending under the weight of the gold they had ſtript from the palaces and temples; others bearing in their hands the grains of this metal they had amaſſed, and in which their wives and their children adorned themſelves on their feſtival ſolemnities. They left their ſandals at the threſhold of the palace where their King was confined, they kiſſed the duſt at the door of his priſon; and, in depoſiting their burden, they fell at his feet and waſhed them with tears. It ſeemed as tho' his calamity had rendered him more ſacred.

A line was traced on the walls at the height to which the gold was agreed to be raiſed. After accumulating the quantities brought in, they were found not to reach the mark. The King perceived the murmurs that eſcaped before him from their impatient avarice. He repreſented to them the impoſſibility of being more expeditious; that the diſtance of Cuſco * was the inevitable cauſe of the delay at which they complained; but that this city alone had ſufficient to realize his promiſe. Two Caſtilians † were ſent thither to inquire if he had deceived them; and it was

* Two hundred and fifty leagues.

† Soto and Peter de Varco.

in this interval that a fatal revolution filled up the misfortunes of the Indians and the crimes of the Caſtilians.

CHAP. LI.

ALMAGRO, with a reinforcement, came from Panama to the aſſiſtance of Pizarro. He heard immediately on his landing *, the diſaſter of the Indians. And as part of an hungry pack that had been thrown out in the chace, when the horn informs them that the ſtag is at bay, forget their fatigue and redouble their ſpeed, panting with eagerneſs and joy; ſo Almagro and his companions haſtened towards Caſſamalca for their ſhare of the prey. On their way, they met the fanatical hypocrite Valverde, whom a ſtrong guard was conducting to the port of Rimac. The ſituation to which he was reduced excited the compaſſion of Almagro, who inquired what crime could have cauſed his diſgrace? "The zeal that makes martyrs," anſwered this perfidious villain, with a ſimple and tranquil air that intimated a peaceful heart. He added, that if Almagro was diſpoſed to hear him, he

* At Puerto Viejo. The old port.

would

would acquieſce in his deciſion, being very certain that to him he ſhould appear not only innocent, but to have acted even laudably.

Impatient to gain information that might be ſubſervient to his intereſt, Almagro requeſted, and eaſily obtained permiſſion to converſe with the priſoner in private; and whilſt the guard, with the newly arrived ſoldiers, were rejoicing at their meeting in a country, the conqueſt of which would enrich them for ever, Valverde, ſitting by Almagro in the ſhade of an old cypreſs, communicated to him in theſe words that infernal venom of which he was full.

"Faithful and generous friend of the moſt "ambitious of men, his ſucceſs, his glory, his "elevation, the authority that he exerciſes, and "the favour he enjoys are all owing to you: "your fortune hath been exhauſted to equip "his fleet; your courage hath ſupported, and "raiſed up his, which had been dejected by ob-"ſtacles and misfortunes. We have ſeen you, "thro' tempeſts and rocks, paſs and repaſs "with unremitted perſeverance from the port of "Panama to theſe dangerous ſhores, where, "without you, he muſt have periſhed; and by "unexpected ſupplies we all have been reſtored "to life and to hope. Without you he never "would have acquired fame but by a blind impro-

"vidence,

"vidence, or rather he would have ſtill conti-
"nued in his original obſcurity. You will
"ſoon diſcover with what gratitude he will re-
"pay ſo many obligations. He hath been in the
"court of Spain; he hath obtained from the
"Emperor the moſt diſtinguiſhed favours, and
"illuſtrious titles; but for whom? for himſelf
"alone. Have you ſeen his commiſſion? are
"you named in it? Has he thought even of
"ſoliciting that his friend, his aſſociate, the
"maker of his fortune, ſhould even command
"under him? It is not forgetfulneſs; no, Pi-
"zarro ſtill remembers, and fears you. He
"would aſſume to himſelf a regal power; but a
"lieutenant like you would have reſtrained his
"ambition, and perhaps obſcured his glory.
"Learn this, which he is greatly anxious to
"conceal from every obſerver, but which I
"have been able to diſcover. The extent of
"his power in theſe regions is not without its
"limits; and his patent grants him but one
"half of this empire, which the equator
"divides. The imperial city, the ſplendid
"Cuſco is beyond his limits; and the firſt who
"will dare to diſpute the conqueſt with him,
"will have a right equal to his. This, Pizarro
"hath foreſeen; and on the empty pretext of a
"ranſom from a King, his ally, whom he pre-
"tends

" tends to retain in priſon within the walls of " Caſſamalca, he is drawing from Cuſco all the " treaſures it contains. Go, Almagro, haſten to " him; but be extremely cautious how you men- " tion to him either your favours or his promiſes; " be cautious how you pretend to a ſhare of the " gold accumulating for him: it is the ranſom of " an Indian, who was taken without you: you " have no right to a ſhare, and Pizarro hath ſaid " ſo."

At this harangue the heart of Almagro was inflamed with envy and pride. But he ſtill affected to doubt that his friend could be ungrateful. " Think you that he cannot be a traitor " to his friend and benefactor," replied the wretch? " He hath baſely betrayed his King and " his God." He then repeated all the calumnies with which he had aſperſed the Caſtilian hero. " And would you know," adds he, " the King, " who is the friend and the ally of Pizarro? He " is a perfidious uſurper, who hath relentleſsly de- " ſtroyed the whole race of the Incas, embrued " his hands in the blood of the people of Cuſco, " driven his brother from the throne, loaded him " with chains, and keeps him confined in a ſcanty " priſon. This we have learnt from the Indians " of the valley, who, under the yoke of Ataliba,

" lament

"lament the fate of their King.—"And where "is the priſon of this King?" aſked the ambitious Almagro—"It is," replied Valverde, "in the "fort of Cannara, a city ſituated in the way from "Quito to Caſſamalca."—"Go," ſaid Almagro, "I have learnt enough: proceed to the port of "Rimac. You ſhall not leave it without recei- "ving ſome proofs of gratitude from a man, who "hates the ungrateful, and will never be of their "number."

Almagro, who from this moment, became the moſt implacable enemy of Pizarro, ſaw that the deliverance of the Inca of Cuſco was the ſure and ready means of forming to himſelf a powerful party, and, at the ſame time, of bearing from his rival by much the faireſt part of his conqueſt. He proceeded towards Cannara, where the news of the maſſacre had ſpread univerſal terror. At his approach the inhabitants fled in the utmoſt conſternation. He attacked the fort, and threatened to ravage it, and immediately exterminate all without mercy, if they refuſed to deliver up to him the Inca, King of Cuſco, whom he had taken, he ſaid, under his protection.

Though reduced to deſpair, the intrepid Corambé reſolutely replied, that Ataliba was ſtill living, and he would obey no one but him.

The

The artillery was diſcharged, and the gates of the citadel began to give way. At the noiſe, and the terror which prevailed within the walls, the haughty Huaſcar exclaimed in a tranſport of joy and of rage, "Lo, theſe are my avengers! May "he die at the price of my crown! May the per- "fidious and bloody Ataliba periſh!" Corambé heard him, and rendered furious by the exceſs of misfortune; "You who prefer," ſaid he, "the "oppreſſion of theſe ravagers to the friendſhip of "your brother, and the ruin of your country to "the peace that might have ſaved it, ſhall never "enjoy your implacable vengeance." Having ſaid this, he ſtruck him with his hatchet a mortal blow.

He had ſcarcely given the ſtroke, when, on ſeeing Huaſcar convulſed at his feet, and wallowing in duſt and blood, he was ſhocked at the crime he had committed. Wild, diſtracted, he left the room, ordered his Indians to follow him, and threw himſelf in deſpair amongſt the enemy. He was ſoon ſeverely wounded; but, in ſeeking for death, opened himſelf a paſſage, by which moſt of his attendants eſcaped. Some of them were taken alive.

Almagro, impatient to carry off Huaſcar, haſtened to enter the fort; he there found the King aſſaſſinated, weltering in his blood, ſtrug-

gling

gling againſt his fate, and, in agonies of pain and rage, crying aloud for vengeance. The ſight of his death filled him with vexation; and having loſt the hope of dividing the empire, he, from that moment, determined to take from his rival the ſupport of Ataliba, who, tho' a priſoner, was ſtill a king, and preſerved his authority over his people. He, on this, gave orders that the body of the Inca of Cuſco ſhould be carried in his train, and proceeded on his way to Caſſamalca.

Pizarro received him with all the ardor of grateful friendſhip. But this emotion of joy was ſucceeded by another of terror, when, in the midſt of the Caſtilians, and in the preſence of Ataliba himſelf, Almagro drew aſide the veil which covered the corpſe of Huaſcar. "Doſt "thou know him?" ſaid he to the King, in the tone of a menacing judge. Ataliba looked, trembled, recoiled in affright, and with an exclamation of the bittereſt grief; "O my bro-"ther!" ſaid he, "hath not then the pitileſs "ſword ſpared thee! They maſſacre Kings!" At theſe words, either from affection, or recurrence to his own ſituation, and a preſentiment of his fate, he was unable to refrain from tears; ſobs ſtifled his voice. "Thou weepeſt," ſaid Almagro, "after having aſſaſſinated him!"—

"I!"

"I!"—"Thyſelf, perfidious man, and by the "hand of a traitor, who, purſued by remorſe, "hath fallen beneath my ſtrokes. Pizarro," adds he, "you have forgotten this King, whoſe "faithful ſubjects came even to Tumbes, to "implore your aid; and, in the mean time, his "enemy, the murderer of his family and peo-"ple, from the receſs of his priſon hath cauſed "him to be aſſaſſinated. I knew his danger, "and flew to his relief, but, in doing this, "have haſtened his fate. The barbarous Ata-"liba hath been too well obeyed."

"O heavenly juſtice!" cried Ataliba, aſto-niſhed at the crime of which he was accuſed, "I! the aſſaſſin of a brother! Ah! inhuman "men, the perpetration of crimes like this is "reſerved for you. It is to you that nothing "is ſacred. This only was wanting to com-"plete your infamy. Ye have baſely betrayed "me; ye have drawn me into a dreadful ſnare, "ye have violated the rights of confidence, "peace, hoſpitality, friendſhip, and all that is "held ſacred by the greateſt barbarians; ye "have ſlaughtered my people; ye have loaded "me with chains, ye have ſet a price on my "liberty and my life; is not all this enough? "Can neither tears, nor blood, nor gold ap-"peaſe your rage! To inflict on me an evil

"more cruel than death, ye impute to me the "murder of a brother! Ah, great God! what "have I done to offend thee, that, from the "height of happineſs, thou ſhouldeſt overwhelm "me with miſery? What more have ye to aſk? "Is it my life that ye ſeek? Take it. Embrue "your hands in my blood, I will not reſiſt you; "but why muſt ye charge me with guilt? I am "weak, in chains, defenceleſs, and forſaken; "Heaven only is our judge, and Heaven de-"votes me to deſtruction. Strike. Ye have "neither witneſſes nor avengers to fear. Strike. "Terminate my misfortunes; but ſpare my "innocence. Pierce my heart, but inſult it "not."

Theſe words, interrupted by tears, had excited in the Caſtilians emotions of pity, when Almagro produced the Indians he had taken to atteſt the crime. Theſe unhappy men trembled, and remained ſilent, not knowing whether they ought to declare, or conceal what they had ſeen; but, compelled by their King himſelf to ſpeak without any diſguiſe, they confeſſed that their chief, the lieutenant of Ataliba, and keeper of Huaſcar, finding himſelf urged to give up his priſoner, killed him with his own hand. This was enough; and calumny, ſupported by the ſemblance of a plot, left ſufficient room for an unfa-

vourable

vourable conſtruction. Theſe Indians, terrified by threats, let fall ſome expreſſions which were conſtrued in the moſt odious ſenſe, and the ſuſpicion of a correſpondence between the Indians at Cannara and their King was converted into a certain proof of the blackeſt guilt. Ataliba, in the minds of the multitude, was convicted of having privately conſpired againſt even the Caſtilians themſelves; and a hundred voices at once called aloud for death.

Pizarro, who perceived, thro' theſe clouds, the innocence of Ataliba, had together with his friends the courage to defend him; but hatred and envy awakened thoſe ſuſpicions which Valverde had already excited; and under this generous zeal they thought ſelf-intereſt and ambition appeared.

At the head of this faction was Alphonſo de Requelme *, a gloomy and untractable fanatic; ſincerer than Valverde, but not leſs violent. Almagro more diſſembling, avoided to join the party. He lamented with Pizarro the trouble he had occaſioned, and blamed himſelf for, what he called, his unfortunate imprudence. But Pizarro too plainly diſcovered, thro' the diſguiſe, the deceit that triumphed in his heart.

* Treaſurer for the Emperor.

In the mean time, this confuſion increaſing, proceeded to kindle diſturbances. Ataliba himſelf had added fuel to the fire by the boldneſs of his defence and the ſeverity of his reproaches againſt theſe tyrants. Deeply injured, his heart had recovered that elaſticity which courage acquires from exceſſive oppreſſion. He no longer followed the advice of his friends, who exhorted him to be patient. "Ah! I have ſuffered too much," ſaid he; "and why ſhould I diſſemble? If gen-"tleneſs could touch their ſavage hearts, would "they not have relented before? Pizarro, they "require my death; they wiſh to deſtroy your "friend: I plainly perceive it. But it is unbe-"coming in virtue, tho' ſlandered, to wear the "dejected countenance of a ſuppliant."

Too weak, in the midſt of ſo numerous and determined a faction, to awe them by threats, Pizarro was obliged to offer violence to himſelf; and like a pilot ſurpriſed by a tempeſt amidſt innumerable rocks in a narrow channel, one while by yielding to its force, and, at another, reſiſting it, he narrowly evaded a ſhip-wreck. The inflexible and undaunted magnanimity of Ataliba, and eſpecially the imprudent warmth with which the young Ferdinand engaged in the defence of this unhappy Prince, ſerved but to irritate them the more. Pizarro began with removing Ferdinand.

dinand. Him he appointed to go with the Inca's ranſom to Spain. Notice was given of a diviſion; and it was neceſſary to determine whether ſhares ſhould be allowed to the attendants of Almagro. Pizarro propoſed it. A murmur aroſe; and at length it was declared aloud, that as they had not contributed to the conqueſt, they ought not to come and uſurp its fruits.

Almagro ſaw, that if he inſiſted on partaking of the ſpoil, he ſhould loſe his new adherents. "Let us diſemble," ſaid he to his men; "for "this is a ſnare laid for us." He immediately, in a general addreſs, declared, that himſelf and his adherents were come to participate in their toils, and not in their booty; and that, in a country where gold was found in abundance, it ought not to create diviſions between men whom mutual eſteem, honour, and duty had united. By this perfidious harrangue, he had the addreſs to ſilence every diſagreement. His feigned moderation acquired him by degrees a powerful party; and Pizarro deſpairing of being able to weaken it, attempted to gain it by largeſſes *, but could not ſucceed. He cauſed the gold and ſilver that had

* *To gain it by largeſſes.*] Zarate affirms, that Pizarro gave to each of the Spaniards who came with Almagro a thouſand *peſos* of gold, or two hundred and twenty-five pounds ſterling. Benzoni ſays, *five hundred ducats to ſome, and a thouſand to others. A tal cinquecento, e a tal mille ducati.*

been amaſſed to be weighed out; theſe he diſtributed, and his army was inriched. The part * which he reſerved for the Emperor, was ſent to the port from whence Ferdinand was to embark; and being preſſed to go thither, he came to take leave of Ataliba, with a heart full of grief.

He had conceived for the Inca that elevated and tender attachment with which diſintereſted minds are inſpired by virtue in diſtreſs. This delightful ſupport Heaven ſometimes affords to an upright man under oppreſſion, to enable him the better to ſuſtain the burthen of adverſity. "I am come to bid you farewell: they have "ſent me to Spain: my duty ſeparates me from "you," ſaid he, "but I depart with the hope "of ſerving you, ſeeing you again, free, ac-"quitted, re-eſtabliſhed on your throne, and to "embrace there an hero, whom I reſpected "while in chains."—"Ah! generous friend!" anſwered Ataliba, folding his chains about him, and preſſing him in his arms, "if you leave me, "I am undone."—What then," ſaid Ferdi-"nand, "do you forget my brothers, and our "friends?"—"They have not your courage; "and Pizarro to ſave me will not hazard his "own ſafety. See," adds he, "that arrogant "and haughty man, who appears to have been

* A fifth.

"fattened

"fattened on blood;" (this was Alphonſo de Requelme) "and this other, who is watch-"ing us with a louring eye;" (this was Almagro) "they wait only for your abſence to deſtroy "me. We ſhall meet no more. Farewell for "ever."

CHAP. LII.

AFTER this melancholy parting, Ferdinand repaired to Rimac. He there found the implacable Valverde, who under the exterior of voluntary humility, concealed his ſhame and his reſentment. He appeared before Ferdinand. "An exceſs of zeal," ſaid he, "hath "led me aſtray; I ought to expiate all the mis-"fortunes I have cauſed. The expoſal of me, "in a deſert iſle, to beaſts of prey, is a ſentence "leſs ſevere than I have deſerved. May Hea-"ven give me fortitude to expire without a "murmur; and I will bleſs you. But if this "fortitude ſhall be denied me, and deſpair ſhould "ſeize my ſoul, it muſt be loſt for ever. Ah! "let me ſave it by penitence. What have ye

"to

"to fear from me? Proſcribed and exiled, tho' "I ſhould continue wicked, I have no oppor- "tunity to injure you. The favour I implore "is to expiate my crime by the moſt burthen- "ſome labours; to go amongſt the wildeſt In- "dians on theſe ſhores and diffuſe ſome light, "at leaſt, ſome ſeed of the faith. I wiſh only "to die a martyr." At theſe words perfidious tears flowed from his hypocritical eyes.

The young man, poſſeſſing all the ſimplicity and flexibility inſeparable from a generous nature, by yielding to the impulſe of compaſſion became the dupe of artifice. He reſtored to the monk his freedom; who, like a tyger, in breaking his chain, trembled with fury and joy.

The prodigious wealth that had been divided was but a ſmall part of Ataliba's ranſom *. To authenticate his promiſe, meſſengers had been ſent for that incredible maſs of gold which the flouriſhing city of Cuſco had beheld, during eleven reigns, gradually accumulating in the palaces of the Kings and the temple of the Sun. Almagro was exceedingly enraged at the idea, that this illuſtrious city, on which his ambitious hopes were founded, would be entirely ruined; and even tho' the Inca's ranſom ſhould not abſorb all its treaſures, yet, that the whole of them

* Only a fifth.

would

would be at Pizarro's command, ſo long as the King ſhould live. It was from this motive that he ſolicited Ataliba's deſtruction, and urged it on with ſo much ardour.

At firſt feigned promiſes of treating him with indulgence were employed, and the hopes of obtaining him a pardon held forth, to extort from him a confeſſion of his guilt. But this unhappy Prince preſerved, even in chains, the inflexible dignity of his race: "They are criminals who "need a pardon," ſaid he; "I am innocent." They magnified the clemency of the Prince in whoſe name he was to be judged. "There will "be occaſion for it," ſaid he, "to forgive my "accuſers the crime of my death; but towards "a King, his equal, who never hath offended "him, his clemency is uſeleſs. Let him be juſt, "and I have nothing to fear."

This pride appeared ſhocking to thoſe who were perſuaded of his guilt. They contended that he ſhould be brought to a trial, ſince he had the audacity to demand it. Pizarro, on this occaſion, exerted the moſt diſintereſted efforts to ſave him. He inſiſted that a council, formed in his camp, was not intended to judge Kings; that a lieutenant of Ataliba had ſuppoſed he ſhould ſerve his maſter by taking off his brother, and therefore had done it without either gaining his

conſent,

conſent, or informing him of his purpoſe; that, in the ſame manner, a project, without the Inca's knowledge, had been formed for his reſcue, which, in his eſtimation, was ſo far from being criminal, that it ought to be conſidered as juſt and commendable; that the Inca, full of dignity, candour, and rectitude, had given no room for thoſe ſuſpicions with which he had been maligned; but that were he guilty, it belonged to the Emperor to appoint his judges; and that he claimed, in his behalf, this important and inviolable privilege. He added that, in his diſpatches, he had informed the Emperor of every thing that had paſſed; that he had referred the cauſe to him; that he would wait to know his pleaſure, and that the whole proceſs ſhould be ſuſpended till Ferdinand's return.

Requelme then began: "You have informed "the Emperor," ſaid he; "and of what? of "your own opinion, no doubt, and the opinion "of a few of your friends, who, like you, have "ſuffered yourſelves to be miſled? Is it thus "then, Pizarro, that he is to gain an inſight "of ſo important a cauſe? It is my demand "that the council hear and try Ataliba, and "that the proceſs, conducted with all the for-"malities of the law, be referred to a ſupreme "tribunal,

" tribunal, where the fate of this uſurper, whom " you call a King, may be decided."

This opinion appeared wiſe and moderate to the minds of the majority; and Pizarro, perceiving that even his own friends were inclined towards it, acquieſced. But obſerving that nature had ſtill ſome influence over the hearts of thoſe, whom he wiſhed to gain, he thought it neceſſary to avail himſelf of it; and from this motive, tho' under the ſpecious pretext of prudence and ſafety, he ſent to Riobamba for the family of the captive King, to retain them all in one priſon.

It was a ſight truly worthy of commiſeration, to ſee the arrival of his children and wives to the palace of Caſſamalca, each loaded with chains. Innocence in diſtreſs is always an intereſting object. But when on the brows of the unhappy ſome traces of glory remain, and when we contemplate in their abaſement thoſe who have been accuſtomed to receive the homage and veneration of mankind, their miſfortunes appear unjuſt becauſe they wound them the more. Thus, the firſt impreſſions of pity at this ſight were ſenſibly and deeply felt by the crowd.

They beheld theſe illuſtrious priſoners, ſorrowful, dejected, ſighing, with down caſt eyes, full of tears, ſlowly approaching on theſe deſolated

lated fields, which were ſtill reeking with the blood that had been ſpilt. The companion of Aciloé, Cora, wept not: a deadly paleneſs was ſpread over her face; and the gloomy and devouring fire which glimmered in her eyes, had dried up the ſource of her tears. Her looks, ſometimes fixt, at others, wild, ſought on theſe plains of ſlaughter the wandering ſhade of her huſband. "Where is he? in what ſpot repoſes "my dear Alonzo," ſaid ſhe? "Where, in this "horrid carnage, fell thoſe who guarded our king?" An Indian replied to her, "This is the place. "Here was the throne of the Inca; there fell all "his friends around him; there they are buried. "Alonzo was at their head; and this ſmall emi-"nence that you ſee is his tomb." At theſe words, which pierced the heart of the tender wife of Alonzo, ſhe, with a ſhriek expreſſed her anguiſh, threw herſelf headlong, and fell on the damp earth, as yet uncovered by turf, embraced it with the ſame ardour as though it had been the body of her husband, reſiſted every effort to draw her from the grave; and when they would remove her by force, it ſeemed from the groans that ſhe uttered, as tho' they were rending her heart-ſtrings. At length the exceſs of her grief burſting aſunder thoſe ties by which nature had till

till then confined within her the offspring of a fatal paſſion, ſhe expired at the moment of becoming a mother. But this agony of deſpair was not fatal to herſelf alone; it extended to the infant ſhe had brought into life. It periſhed without opening its eyes to the light, without having felt its miſerable condition.

The conſtancy of Ataliba had hitherto diſdained to ſooth his perſecutors, but the ſoul which misfortune had elevated and confirmed, and whoſe tranquil pride deſpiſed adverſity, was at once dejected, when he beheld in the priſon, his wives and his children loaded, like himſelf, with chains, throw themſelves into his arms and crowd around his knees. He was confounded; his eyes teemed with tears; overpowered with grief he received them into his boſom; he preſſed them to his heart; mingled his ſighs with their complaints, and forgot that his enemies were the witneſſes of his weakneſs; or rather bluſhed not to ſhew himſelf a huſband and a father.

Pizarro, obſerving the eyes of his companions melt with the ſame emotions of compaſſion that he experienced in himſelf, was pleaſed with his device, and the rather, as he perceived the pride of Ataliba abated; but to allow more time for his courage to relax, he ordered that the Inca ſhould be left alone with his family.

During this ſuſpenſion of reſtraint, nature freely yielded to every impulſe of grief and of love. Bathed with a profuſion of tears, Ataliba beheld himſelf in the midſt of his children, kiſſing his chains, and inquiring what evil he had done? what crime their mothers had committed? and, if they were all brought thither that they might die together? This affectionate huſband and good father caſt a languiſhing look on his deſolated family; and his heart, oppreſſed with anguiſh, pity and fear, could anſwer them only in ſighs.

CHAP. LIII.

THE fatal day arrived, and the council was aſſembled. It was compoſed of the eldeſt, and thoſe of the higheſt rank amongſt the Caſtilian warriors. Pizarro preſided; but Almagro and Requelme were aſſeſſors. An awful ſilence prevailed. Ataliba was brought forth; they interrogated him, and he replied with that noble frankneſs which accompanies innocence. They charged him with the deſtruction of the family of

of the Incas; they oppoſed to him the witneſſes of the murder of the King of Cuſco, and imputed to his contrivance, the plot formed for his reſcue from the palace of Caſſamalca. His defence was ſupported by truth. He briefly explained to them the cauſe and calamities of the civil war; the meaſures he had taken to bend the inflexible pride of his brother; and to appeaſe his reſentment, even after he had conquered him. "If at any time I could have wiſhed for his "death," ſaid he, "it would have been when "he raiſed his people againſt me, and when, "from his priſon, he rekindled the flames of war; "as this crime would then have conduced to the "grandeur and repoſe of my empire, I might per-"haps have been ſeduced. I have ever revered "the blood of my race; never have I ſought to "ſpill it; and if in battle, when I was abſent, "and at a diſtance, in oppoſition to my will, the "blind ardour of my ſoldiers ſpared no one, the "crime is his who compelled me to arm them "for my own defence. Caſtilians, my victory "coſt me more tears, than all the evils I ex-"perience will ever make me ſhed. Enquire," continued he, "if I have rendered myſelf odious "to my people. I am fallen from a throne; "my ſceptre is broken; my friends are dead; "I am alone in chains, with women and chil-

" dren; they have nothing further to fear from
" me, or to hope. It is in ſuch an extremity
" of weakneſs and miſery, that a good King
" may be diſtinguiſhed from a tyrant; it is in
" circumſtances like mine that the hatred of
" the public breaks forth, or its love becomes
" conſpicuous. Examine what intereſt I have
" in their hearts, and if they treat me as
" wicked or guilty. A reſpectful tenderneſs,
" a diſintereſted and faithful attachment, an
" obedience at once voluntary and entire, in a
" word, the love that my people diſcover to-
" wards a miſerable captive, will witneſs for
" me againſt the imputations of ſlander; and I
" require, even of you, to be told whether a
" triumph like this be reſerved for guilt or for
" virtue? Their ſentiments and conduct are
" now open to your own inſpection, and to it,
" Judge of my life, I appeal. Ye cannot,
" whatever ye may have been told, ye can never
" believe that he, who, from his priſon, and
" degraded as I am, ſtill finds his will, though
" deſtitute of power to enforce it, is received
" as ſacred, and beholds his obedient ſubjects
" proſtrate before him, whilſt their tears trickle
" over his chains, was ever unjuſt or ſanguinary
" on the throne. What I have been on the throne,
" you have found me in fetters, plain, ſincere,

" ſenſible

" ſenſible to injury, but more ſenſible to friend-
" ſhip. I am accuſed of having attempted to
" eſcape, and of meditating an inſurrection a-
" gainſt you. The thought never entered my
" mind; but, had I cheriſhed ſuch deſigns,
" would it have been criminal in me? Regard
" thoſe bloody plains; behold theſe chains with
" which ye have diſgraced the innocent hands
" of a King; and determine whether any expe-
" dient could be unlawful that might have con-
" duced to my ſafety. Ah! ye yourſelves have
" but too fully juſtified what deſpair might have
" prompted me to try. Notwithſtanding, I call
" Heaven to witneſs, that, as Pizarro had given me
" his word and yours that my life ſhould be grant-
" ed me, my liberty reſtored, my family ſpared,
" and the remains of my unfortunate people ſuf-
" fered to remain unmoleſted, I had placed all
" my hopes in him, and was entirely occupied in
" collecting the gold for my ranſom. My God,
" who no doubt is your God, knows my heart,
" and is my witneſs, that I tell you the truth.
" But if my innocence will not affect you, reſpect
" my misfortunes. I am a father, a huſband, and
" a King. Judge then the anguiſh of my heart.
" Do ye wiſh to ſee me a ſuppliant; I am one,
" and I bring to your feet the tears of my people,

" my children and their feeling mothers. Theſe " are, at leaſt, innocent."

The hearts of the judges were touched by this artleſs and affecting addreſs; and Pizarro entertained no doubt of their favourable diſpoſition. Ataliba was ordered to withdraw; and their opinions were collected. . . . But, how great was the aſtoniſhment of Pizarro and his friends, to find that the majority condemned him to die! They inſtantly remonſtrated againſt this unjuſt deciſion, and reminded the council of their reſolution to refer the cauſe, after having gone thro' this proceſs, to the tribunal of the Emperor. Requelme propoſed it; the whole council had acquieſced; the unanimity of the reſolve could not be denied; and Ataliba, tho' condemned, had ſtill the hope of being carried into Spain, and there heard and tried. But the malignant fury that purſued his life was too vigilant to loſe his prey.

Valverde, eſcaped from his chains, and again at large, returned, with rage ſtill rankling in his heart, and, having diſguiſed himſelf, entered, unknown, in the midſt of a dark night, into the walls of Caſſamalca. At this hour Almagro with his partiſans were contriving their horrid plot. The villain preſenting himſelf before them, ſaid, " Acknowledge, my friends, the " faithfulneſs of his promiſes, who hath de-

" clared

" clared to the juſt man, *Thou ſhalt tread on the*
" *lion and adder.* Ye have ſeen me loaded with
" irons, proſcribed, ſent on board a ſhip to be
" left in a deſolate iſland, where I might become
" the prey of voracious beaſts; and now, be-
" hold me in the midſt of you. God hath
" broken the ſnare of the wicked; he derides
" the counſels of the ungodly; he hath held
" forth his hand to the weak, innocent, and
" perſecuted. But will ye, warriors, whom he
" hath choſen to defend his cauſe, and whom
" he hath bleſſed with ſtrength and courage to
" avenge it, conſent that Pizarro ſhall ſend to
" Spain a tyrant, his friend, your accuſer, him,
" who by his riches, can gain the court and
" the council, and who, if he be heard, will
" impeach you, as vile plunderers, baſe aſſaſ-
" ſins, made for murder and rapine, faithleſs,
" ſhameleſs, pitileſs, unworthy the name of
" men, and of Chriſtians? Is this your deſign?
" and what right have you to ſcreen him from
" the puniſhment of his crime? He hath been
" tried and convicted of uſurpation, tyranny, and
" the murder of his brother; why then with-
" hold the execution of the ſentence to which he
" is condemned? Let him die, and the whole
" will be ended."

The

The atrocity of this advice ſtartled the boldeſt. But, Valverde, without allowing them time to heſitate, ſaid: "On this your life and honour "depend, and, what is far more to be regarded, "the glory of religion, and the intereſts of "Heaven: the God of vengeance who ſent me, "hath forbidden you to deliberate. Pizarro is "now at reſt; all is quiet; and Requelme, "who conducted the proceſs, hath a right to "ſee, and interrogate Ataliba at all hours; let "him procure me admiſſion to the priſon, and I "deſire only two determined men with him and "myſelf."

The importance of the crime prevailed over the horror of committing it; and by a guilty ſilence, they ſhuddered while they conſented to what they could not approve. Then, Valverde, relaxing his voice, went on: "In depriving this "infidel of life we ſhall not neglect the care of "his ſalvation. It is my wiſh, by purifying "him with the holy water of baptiſm, to render "his death no leſs precious to himſelf than it is "juſt, and to ſanctify the homicide preſcribed "to us by the law."

The family of Ataliba, with eyes exhauſted of tears, and hearts wearied with ſobs, were now ſleeping around him. But the Prince, perplexed with melancholy forebodings, was unable to

to close his eye-lids. He heard his prison open. He beheld Requelme enter, and, with him three men, wrapped in long cloaks, that concealed all but their eyes, which appeared to gleam with cruelty. An emotion of terror seized him; he rose; and overcoming his weakness advanced to meet them. "Inca," said Requelme, "let us retire, and not wake these women and "children. It is but just that the innocent "should repose in peace. Attend. You have "been tried and condemned; according to the "rigour of the law, fire would be your punish-"ment. But it depends upon yourself to avoid "the flames; and this religious man, whom "you will hear, is come to offer you the "means."

The Prince, at these words, turned pale. "I "know," said he, "that the council have tried "me; but must they not send me to the court "of Spain, and reserve for your King a right "that belongs only to him?"—"Trust me, "the moments are dear," continued Requelme: "attend to this virtuous and wise man, who "hath interested himself in your misfortunes."

Valverde then went on. "Do you not desire "to worship the God of the Christians?"—— "Certainly," answered the unhappy Prince, "if

"if this God, as he is declared to be, is bene-
"ficent, powerful, and juſt, if nature is his work,
"and the Sun himſelf one of his gifts, I join,
"with all nature, to adore him. How ungrate-
"ful, how irrational muſt he be, who ſhould
"refuſe him his love?"——"And do you de-
"ſire to be inſtructed," ſtill aſked this perfidious monk, "in the ſacred truths that he hath reveal-
"ed to us, to become acquainted with his wor-
"ſhip and follow his law?"——"I earneſtly de-
"ſire it," replied the Inca, "as I have told you,
"and am impatient to open my eyes to the light,
"that they may be enlightened and I may be-
"lieve."——"Heaven be praiſed," replied Valverde, "he is diſpoſed as I wiſhed him to be.
"Implore then, on your knees, this God of good-
"neſs and of clemency; and receive the ſalutary
"water that regenerates his children." The Inca, with an humble mind and a docile diſpoſition, bowed, and received, on his knees, the holy water of baptiſm. "Heaven is opened," ſaid Valverde, "and the moments are precious." At the ſame inſtant he gave the ſignal to his two attendants; and the fatal cord ſuppreſſed the Inca's laſt ſighs.

It was from the lamentable cries of his children and their mothers that the news of his death was ſpread, at the return of morning. Some of the

the Spaniards were ſtricken with horror; but the greateſt part applauded the audacity of the aſſaſſins; and it was thought they had been ſufficiently merciful in not extending the fate of this unhappy Prince to his wives and children, who, from this moment, were abandoned to the compaſſion of the Indians.

Pizarro, indignant, ſhocked and weary of contending againſt wickedneſs, after having imprecated curſes on theſe execrable aſſaſſins and their fanatical partizans, retired to the city of the Kings *, which then was beginning to be built in the vale of Rimac. Licentiouſneſs, plunder, rapacity, murder, and deſolation, without reſtraint, every where prevailed; the face of this continent preſented nothing to the view but tribes of Indians, falling, as they fled, into the ſnares, or beneath the ſwords, of the Spaniards. From the coaſt of Mexico came Alvarado, the friend of Cortez, and the ſcourge of both Ame-

* He gave it the name of Ciudad de los Reyes, either from the circumſtance of having laid the firſt ſtone, at that ſeaſon when the Church celebrates the feſtival of the Three Kings, or, as it is more probable, in honour of Juanna and Charles, the ſovereigns of Caſtile. This name it ſtill retains among the Spaniards, in all legal and formal deeds; but it is better known to foreigners by that of *Lima*, a corruption of the ancient appellation of the valley in which it is ſituated. Dr Robertſon's Hiſt. of America, Vol. II. p. 194.

ricas,

ricas, the rival of the new conquerors. He ſeized on their prey, thirſting like them for gold and for blood. Through the whole extent of this immenſe empire, ravage and deſolation univerſally prevailed. An innumerable multitude of Indians were ſlaughtered; almoſt all the reſt, enſlaved, were driven to periſh in the mines, a thouſand times envying the fate of thoſe who had been maſſacred.

At length, when theſe ravenous wolves had ſatiated themſelves with the carnage of Indians, their ungovernable ferocity turned them on each other. The cry of blood from Ataliba reached to Heaven. Scarcely any of thoſe who had contributed to the crime of his death eſcaped from puniſhment; and while ſome, taken by the Indians in unfrequented places, expired beneath the fatal cord, others, for once juſt, deſtroyed one another. The execrable Valverde *, conducting a band of theſe plunderers in purſuit of ſome Indians, who had retired to the woods for ſafety, fell into the hands of Cannibals; and being burnt and tore aſunder while alive, was devoured before he expired; he died with blaſphemies on his tongue, in rage and de-

* *The execrable Valverde.*] The Truth is too horrid to relate; Juſtice is here ſubſtituted in its place.

ſpair.

ſpair. Perjured and a traitor * towards Pizarro, Almagro ſuffered the moſt ſhameful puniſhment, and his puſilanimity completed the juſt opprobrium of his death. Pizarro, whoſe guilt conſiſted in having given ſcope to the commiſſion of ſo many crimes, was betrayed by his own adherents, and fell by aſſaſſination. Overpowered by numbers, he ſunk, but as a great man who diſdained life and defied death. After he expired, a war was kindled between his rivals and his brothers. Cuſco, ſacked and deſerted, ſaw the carcaſſes of its tyrants ſcattered on its plains. The waves of the Amazon were red with the blood of thoſe it had beheld ſpreading deſolation on its banks; and fanaticiſm, ſurrounded by maſſacres and devaſtation, ſitting on heaps of ſlain, extended her looks over immenſe ruins, applauded herſelf at the ſight, and praiſed Heaven for crowning her labours.

* *Perjured and a traitor.*] Almagro had ſworn a-new, on a conſecrated hoſt, never to infringe on the rights of Pizarro, and his oath was expreſſed in theſe words: *O Lord, if I violate the oath which I here make, I wiſh that thou mayeſt confound me in my body, and in my ſoul.* According to this oath he was perjured.

THE END.

BRITISH MUSEUM
30
71
NOV